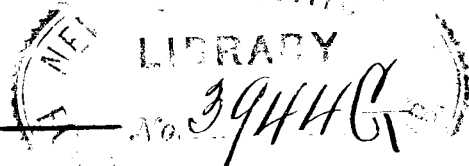


A SERIES
OF
GRADUATED LESSONS
IN
LANGUAGE AND GRAMMAR,
FOR THE INSTRUCTION
OF THE
DEAF AND DUMB;

BY
CHARLES BAKER,
PRINCIPAL OF THE YORKSHIRE INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF AND DUMB;

AND
DUNCAN ANDERSON,
PRINCIPAL OF THE GLASGOW INSTITUTION.



“WRITING IS ASSOCIATED WITH SPEECH, AND SPEECH WITH THOUGHT; BUT WRITTEN CHARACTERS AND IDEAS MAY BE CONNECTED WITHOUT THE INTERVENTION OF SOUNDS, AS IN HIEROGLYPHIC CHARACTERS.”— *Jerome Cardan.*

Doncaster :

PRINTED BY THE PUPILS OF THE YORKSHIRE INSTITUTION FOR THE DEAF
AND DUMB, AT THE INSTITUTION PRESS.

—
1841.

ADDRESS.

THE following lessons were originally designed solely for the use of the pupils of the Glasgow and Yorkshire Institutions, had they been intended for general use, more precision and order would have been attempted in their execution

They are now offered to the other Public Institutions for the Deaf and Dumb on the conditions named in the accompanying circular, in the hope that they will form a ground-work for instruction in language and grammar, in the absence of any work of the kind, and lead to the production of a volume for a similar purpose of greater merit and pretensions.

Should the offer made in the accompanying circular be accepted by the Institutions to which it is addressed, great care will be taken to supply the various rules from the best authorities, and the notes for Teachers, which are chiefly intended for junior assistants, will be more extended. Both these features will be rendered more distinct than in the present specimen by the employment of different types. The succeeding portions of the work will comprise all that is necessary to give the deaf and dumb a competent knowledge of the English Language both by Rules and Examples.

A Preface will also accompany the reprint, containing such general observations on the Instruction of the Deaf and Dumb, as may be suggested by the experience of the Authors.

March 25, 1841.

3711

LIBRARY
NEW YORK SCHOOL FOR THE DEAF

NOUNS OR NAMES.

The following words are selected for the first lessons on account of their being the names of objects which can be procured and shewn to the pupils, drawn before them, exhibited in pictures, or made intelligible by signs. Their shortness serves to make them easily remembered, and at the same time makes them a proper exercise for children who are only beginning to write.

saw	bow	egg	nut	owl	ass	hen	ant
axe	pan	bag	pea	dog	sky	bat	mop
gun	pin	hoe	pie	cow	fox	fly	fan
awl	pot	tub	arm	ox	rat	bee	rod
key	pit	mat	gig	cat	ear	net	can
top	jug	cap	hip	pig	eye	ape	bow
hat	cup	sun	man	boy	leg	ink	bed

coat	worm	kite	fire	nest	wood
bull	pump	ball	rake	fish	iron
frog	lock	whip	cart	shoe	gold
desk	knob	ship	dish	gate	lead
dust	wire	comb	door	pipe	sand
lion	plum	fork	nail	soap	coal
swan	flea	cage	tack	cork	rain
duck	cake	bird	ring	rope	snow
corn	bell	doll	milk	hole	wind
girl	boat	tree	leaf	well	dish

slate	house	mouse	camel	cloud
clock	money	chair	ruler	string
knife	sword	wheat	stone	carpet
watch	penny	eagle	sower	street
plate	flail	thief	heart	garden
plant	paper	easel	elbow	woman
table	apple	bread	thumb	needle
wheel	water	purse	brush	cannon
tongs	glass	river	joint	father
poker	press	horse	thigh	mother
goose	coach	straw	nail	church
grass	basin	tiger	screw	sponge

OBJECTS IN A SCHOOL-ROOM.

master	lead-pencil	pointer	seal	stage
teacher	book	tablet	sealing-wax	steps
assistant	leaf	duster	wafer	cabinet
pupil	page	cupboard	floor	minerals
desk	word	inkstand	ceiling	shells
bench	syllable	paper	door	insects
stool	copy-book	sponge	window	beam
chair	copy	rubber	pane	flue
slate	lesson	chalk	hinge	bust
pencil	picture	pen-knife	screw	board
quill	map	paper-knife	nail	stove
pen	alphabet	hone	lock	clock
ink	ruler	strop	bolt	shelf

PARTS OF THE BODY, &c.

head	gun	wrist	anle	tear	health
face	brain	elbow	foot	bone	sickness
nose	neck	hand	instep	flesh	pain
nostril	eye	thumb	heel	blood	ache
mouth	eyelash	finger	sole	skin	fever
palate	eyelid	nail	toe	hair	fit
tongue	eyebrow	joint	corn	curl	measles
tooth	eyeball	knuckle	tendon	saliva	chilblain
cheek	temple	fist	limbs	sweat	boil
dimple	forehead	leg	beard	stomach	itch
chin	breast	hip	whisker	belly	cough
jaw	waist	thigh	wrinkle	bowels	wound
ear	side	knee	heart	lungs	life
skull	back	knee-pan	vein	diaphragm	death
throat	shoulder	shin	artery	muscle	gout
lip	arm	calf	pulse	spine	palsy

ARTICLES OF FOOD, &c.

beef	pudding	soup	goose	treacle
mutton	pie	porridge	pigeon	honey
lamb	butter	flour	hare	toast
veal	cheese	salt	woodcock	crust
pork	potato	pepper	pheasant	crumb
bacon	carrot	mustard	sausage	custard
ham	turnip	vinegar	fruit	rice
meat	onion	pickles	loaf	water
gravy	lettuce	fish	biscuit	cider
fat	cabbage	sauce	preserves	wine
lean	peas	cod	tea	whiskey
gristle	beans	salmon	coffee	beer
bone	radishes	lobster	sugar	brandy
bread	celery	fowl	milk	rum
cake	leeks	turkey	cream	gin

MEALS:—Breakfast,—Lunch,—Dinner,—Tea,—Supper.

ARTICLES OF CLOTHING

clothes	hat-band	socks	tippet	silk
coat	braces	garters	muff	lace
jacket	shirt	gown	veil	satin
trowsers	collar	frock	cap	velvet
drawers	frill	apron	night-cap	stuff
tunic	stock	cloak	night-gown	skirt
belt	boots	mantle	patten	sleeve
pocket	half-boots	shawl	dressing-gown	cuff
button	shoes	pelisse	cape	collar
breeches	slippers	petticoat	cloth	wristband
buckle	gloves	shift	fustian	lining
gaiters	neckerchief	stays	corduroy	seam
straps	comforter	skirt	cotton	button-hole
great coat	stockings	bonnet	muslin	stay-lace
wig	handkerchief	ribbon	flannel	string

FURNITURE.]

chair	bed	book-case	table-cover	shovel
table	bedstead	book-shelves	blind	stove
sofa	bed-curtain	arm-chair	carpet	desk
sideboard	bolster	piano-forte	hearth-rug	bench
looking-glass	pillow	fire-screen	fender	steps
chest-of-drawers	writing-desk	stool	grate	drawer
clock	cupboard	footstool	poker	box
barrel	wardrobe	buffet	tongs	trunk

IMPLEMENTS.

plough	spade
harrow	grape
sickle	rake
scythe	shears
hay-fork	dutch-hoe
flail	pruning-knife
dibble	hedging-bill
roller	cart
mattock	wagon

hammer
file
chisel
pincers
plane
awl
gimblet
hatchet
mallet

TOOLS.

screw-driver	wimble
bed-key	foot-rule
pliers	hone
brace	square
gouge	vice
glue-pot	anvil
lever	rasp
crow	trowel
compasses	plummet

PERSONS.

Christ	ploughman	bookseller	fifer	boy
clergyman	policeman	coachman	beggar	girl
doctor	bellman	ostler	footman	child
surgeon	porter	carter	cook	infant
teacher	sweep	postman	housemaid	babe
pupil	lamplighter	fisherman	nurse	king
soldier	millor	mower	thief	queen
sailor	grocer	reaper	robber	Frenchman
labourer	merchant	haymaker	man	Englishman
gardener	butcher	drummer	woman	Turk

DOMESTIC ANIMALS.

bull	lamb	sucking-pig	kitten	turkey-poult
cow	goat	dog	rat	barn-fowl
calf	he-goat	bitch	mouse	cock
heifer	she-goat	puppy	rabbit	hen
ox	kid	mastiff	buck	chicken
horse	ass	greyhound	doe	gander
mare	he-ass	terrier	poultry	goose
foal	she-ass	sheep-dog	peacock	gosling
colt	foal	lap-dog	pea-hen	drake
filly	mule	bull-dog	pea-chick	duck
sheep	pig	cat	turkey	duckling
ram	boar	he-cat	turkey-cock	pigeon
ewe	sow	she-cat	turkey-hen	guinea-fowl

FRUITS, VEGETABLES, &c.

pear	strawberry	parsley	hay	bramble
orange	raspberry	rhubarb	straw	groundsel
plum	potato	asparagus	clover	dock
grape	carrot	artichoke	tulip	weed
raisin	turnip	bean	pink	apple-tree
fig	cauliflower	pea	flower	pear-tree
cherry	onion	grass	thyme	cherry-tree
prune	leek	corn	balm	ivy
peach	parsnip	wheat	mint	larch-tree
lemon	cabbage	oat	daisy	heather
gooseberry	lettuce	barley	nettle	poplar
blackberry	beet-root	rye	thistle	rose-bush
currant	spinage	flax	dandelion	hawthorn

MINERALS AND METALS.

flint	pebble	limestone	salt-petre	brass
coal	sand	marble	ironstone	gold
chalk	gravel	sulphur	zinc	silver
clay	granite	marl	pewter	tin
earth	stone	salt	iron	lead
slate	freestone	alum	copper	steel

GAMES, TOYS, AND EXERCISES.

ball	chess	kite	hunting
peg-top	draughts	sucker	fishing
whip-top	bagatelle	skates	swimming
humming-top	football	blind-man's-buff	swinging
marbles	cricket	hop-scotch	jumping
shinty	wicket	dancing	marching
bow	bat-and-ball	fencing	skaiting
arrow	hoop	climbing	skipping
target	shuttlecock	shooting	running
ninepins	battledore	walking	vaulting
quoits	leap-frog	racing	leaping

INDEFINITE ARTICLE AND NOUN.

An is used in writing and speaking before words commencing with a vowel ; a is used before words commencing with a consonant ; the following and a few others are exceptions,— an hour, an herb, an hostler, an heir.

The Vowels are A. E. I. O. U consequently an Awl, is written or spoken of, *not* a Awl ; an Egg, *not* a Egg ; an Inkstand, *not* a Inkstand ; an orange, *not* a orange ; an Umbrella, *not* a umbrella.

The Singular expresses only one object, the Plural any number more than one. The Regular Plural is formed by adding s to the Singular ; as, pen, pens.

REGULAR PLURALS.

SING.	PLUR.	SING.	PLUR.	SING.	PLUR.
a pen	pens	a door	doors	a cottage	cottages
a cat	cats	a horse	horses	a candle	candles
an egg	eggs	a chair	chairs	an umbrella	umbrellas
a map	maps	an oven	ovens	a ribbon	ribbons
a cap	caps	a pond	ponds	a garden	gardens
a key	keys	a frog	frogs	a leopard	leopards
a bee	bees	a clock	clocks	a feather	feathers
a day	days	a swan	swans	an obelisk	obelisks
a net	nets	an onion	onions	a panther	panthers
a mat	mats	a king	kings	a shutter	shutters
a wig	wigs	a chain	chains	a window	windows
a cub	cubs	a table	tables	a squirrel	squirrels
a leg	legs	an acorn	acorns	a windmill	windmills
a cup	cups	a pipe	pipes	a picture	pictures
a pig	pigs	a book	books	a steamer	steamers
a pan	pans	a lark	larks	a basket	baskets
a dog	dogs	a nest	nests	an inkstand	inkstands
a nut	nuts	an elbow	elbows	a ceiling	ceilings
a gun	guns	an orange	oranges	a carpet	carpets
a bat	bats	a head	heads	a cloud	clouds
a flag	flags	a hand	hands	a folio	folios
a top	tops	a field	fields	a chisel	chisels
a hen	hens	a ship	ships	an apple	apples
		an oyster	oysters	a hammer	hammers
		a lamb	lambs	a button	buttons
		a pencil	pencils	a fender	fenders
an oak	oaks	a stove	stoves	a shovel	shovels
an eel	eels	a lamp	lamps	a sixpence	sixpences
an arm	arms	a screw	screws	an oil-can	oil-cans
a cart	carts	a shell	shells	a stable	stables
a bow	bows	a stone	stones	a shilling	shilling
an oar	oars	a pump	pumps	an elephant	elephants
a fife	fifes	a dwarf	dwarfs	a portico	porticos
a hoof	hoofs	a scarf	scarfs	a stomach	stomachs
a gulf	gulfs	a wharf	wharfs	a monarch	monarchs
a turf	turfs	a chief	chiefs	a patriarch	patriarchs

IRREGULAR PLURALS.

Nouns that end in ch, soft sh, or ss, take es in the plural ; as arch arches ; fish, fishes ;

Some nouns that end in x, and some that end in o, take es in the plural ; as fox, foxes . hero, heroes ; except grotto, portico, and a few others

Nouns that end in y change to ies in the plural ; as lady, ladies ;—if the y is preceded by a vowel it is not changed ; as boy, boys ; day, days.

Some nouns that end in f and fe change to ves in the plural ; as loaf, loaves ; wife, wives ; except dwarf, gulf, file, handkerchief, and some others.

Some nouns are altogether irregular in their plurals ; as foot, feet ; child, children.

Some nouns are the same in both the singular and plural ; as deer, deer.

<i>ch soft es</i>	<i>x es</i>	
a n arch arches	a box boxes	a sheaf sheaves
a torch torches	a fox foxes	a half halves
a church churches	a tax taxes	a leaf leaves
a watch watches	a sex sexes	a knife knives
a coach coaches		a shelf shelves
a peach peaches	<i>o es</i>	a thief thieves
a n inch inches	a hero heroes	a wolf wolves
a beech beeches	a potato potatoes	a staff staves
a leech leeches	a negro negroes	
a perch perches	a cargo cargoes	<i>Irregular</i>
a n ostrich ostriches	a volcano volcanoes	a foot feet
a bench benches	wo woes	a tooth teeth
a crutch crutches	<i>y ies</i>	a goose geese
a match matches	a spy spies	a mouse mice
	an army armies	a louse lice
<i>sh es</i>	a booby boobies	a penny pence
a brush brushes	a lady ladies	a child children
a fish fishes	a berry berries	an ox oxen
a bush bushes	a pony ponies	a man men
a dish dishes	a city cities	a woman women
a flash flashes	a duty duties	a die dice
a lash lashes	a penny pennies	a cow kine
a mesh meshes	a body bodies	a sow swine
a wish wishes	a fly flies	a halfpence halfpence
a sash sashes	a factory factories	<i>Unchanged</i>
	a cherry cherries	a sheep sheep
<i>ss es</i>	a puppy puppies	a deer deer
a n ass asses	a gallery galleries	a swine swine
a kiss kisses	an enemy enemies	a salmon salmon
a lassesses	a study studies	
a class classes	a story stories	a stone six stone
a press presses	a victory victories	a dozen two dozen
a n abyss abysses	a butterfly butterflies	a sail twenty sail
a glass glasses		a hundred five hundred
a miss misses	<i>f & fe ves</i>	a thousand ten thousand
a mess messes	a calf calves	a yoke two yoke
a moss mosses	a loaf loaves	a brace three brace
a loss losses	a wife wives	a couple three couple
a n crocus crocuses	a life lives	a score four score

DIFFERENT KINDS OF NOUNS.

Some Nouns are only used in the Singular ; as tea, beer, bread.

Some Nouns are only used in the Plural ; as oats, ashes.

Some Nouns signify a multitude or collection of objects ; as flock, cattle ; they are called Collective Nouns.

Some Nouns express a particular quality ; as goodness, wisdom ; they are called Abstract Nouns.

Some Nouns are the names of particular individuals, things, or places, as John, London ; they are called Proper Nouns, and are written with a capital letter at the beginning of the word ; all other Nouns are Common.

SINGULAR. NOUNS.	PLURAL. NOUNS.	COLLECTIVE. NOUNS.	ABSTRACT. NOUNS.	PROPER. NOUNS.
tea	bellows	flock	sin	God
milk	scissors	cattle	sorrow	Christ
hay	toys	public	wrath	Victoria
snuff	trowsers	multitude	goodness	Thames
bread	ashes	council	meekness	Ann
beer	lungs	gentry	love	William
beef	bowels	nobility	hatred	Johnson
cheese	salts	clergy	industry	Smith
butter	braces	folk	idleness	Englishman
silver	clothes	nation	wickedness	Turk
hemp	reins	people	truth	Britain
barley	victuals	mankind	hardness	England
vinegar	oats	peasantry	softness	Scotland
lime	stays	party	anger	France
mustard	snuffers	fleet	cunning	China
tar	sugar-nippers	regiment	kindness	Canaan
rubber	lemon-squeezers	crowd	lying	Yorkshire
coffee	nut-crackers	troop	death	Lanarkshire
sponge	bed-hangings	swarm	life	Kent
salt	spectacles	committee	happiness	Glasgow
paper	alms	army	misery	Exeter
ivory	people	navy	truth	London
leather	news	class	strength	Dublin
starch	breeches	bunch	sloth	the Alps
treacle	drawers	family	friendship	the Red Sea
sugar	riches	band	wisdom	Vesuvius
air	thanks	crowd	mercy	the Baltic
flour	measles	mob	poverty	the Thames
paste	goods	meeting	diligence	the Clyde
gold	pincers	jury	astonishment	the Severn
corn	nippers	tribe	gladness	Spring
alphabet	shambles	group	bashfulness	Summer
grammar	tidings	shoal	sadness	Sunday
geography	filings	drove	carelessness	Monday
money	mittens	head	pain	Tuesday
weather	shears	covey	holiness	January
snow	premises	brood	salvation	February
sleet	materials	litter	language	March

GENDER, OR THE DISTINCTION OF SEX.

The names of Males are Masculine ; as man, husband, boy, horse.

The names of Females are Feminine ; as woman, wife, girl, mare.

Things without life are of no sex ; and are called the Neuter Gender.

Some words are used in speaking of either males or females ; these are called the Common Gender.

The Sex may be distinguished by different words, by a different termination of the same word, or by adding a word.

MASCULINE.	FEMININE.	MASCULINE.	FEMININE.	NEUTER GENDER.
<i>different words.</i>				
man	woman	traitor	traitress	house
boy	girl	mayor	mayoress	field
lad	lass	patron	patroness	corn
husband	wife	prince	princess	wine
king	queen	prophet	prophetess	river
lord	lady	shepherd	shepherdess	chair
earl	countess	giant	giantess	table
gentleman	lady	idolater	idolatress	sun
master	mistress	widower	widow	moon
father	mother			sea
grandfather	grandmother	<i>additional word.</i>		stars
brother	sister	cock-sparrow	hen-sparrow	knife
son	daughter	cock-pheasant	hen-pheasant	box
uncle	aunt	man-servant	maid-servant	candle
nephew	niece	man-cook	woman-cook	paper
bachelor	maid	he-ass	she-ass	bat
sir	madam	he-goat	she-goat	milk
sloven	slut	he-cat	she-cat	leather
horse	mare	he-bear	she-bear	fur
bull	cow	male-child	female-child	steel
black	heifer	male-butterfly	female-butterfly	iron
colt	filly	buck-rabbit	doe-rabbit	fire
buck	doe	milk-man	milk-maid	air
stag	hind	moor-cock	moor-hen	plant
hart	roe	turkey-cock	turkey-hen	book
run	ewe	pea-cock	pea-hen	letter
dog	bitch	male-cousin	female-cousin	snuff
boar	sow	male-prisoner	female-prisoner	coal
cock	hen	male-teacher	female-teacher	straw
drake	duck	male-assistant	female-assistant	desk
gander	goose	male-lodger	female-lodger	carpet
		male-descendant	female-descendant	wall
		orphan-boy	orphan-girl	ladder
				tree
<i>different terminations.</i>				leaf
actor	actress	NOUNS OF THE COMMON GENDER.		pool
bridegroom	bride	heart	friend	linen
benefactor	benefactress	bird	neighbour	muslin
duke	duchess	fish	pony	stuff
emperor	empress	insect	pig	picture
governor	governess	reptile	pupil	stick
heir	heiress	dog	scholar	umbrella
hero	heroine	parent	servant	glass
Jew	Jewess	child	rabbit	slate
lion	lioness	infant	patient	bone
tiger	tigress	child	prisoner	spade
		cousin	buyer	fruit
			thief	
			vagrant	

NUMERAL ADJECTIVES.

It is very desirable that the nature of numbers should be explained to children by the Bead-table, and then that they should be set to count a number of objects before them, or placed before them for this purpose.

1 one	.	11 eleven	.....
2 two	..	12 twelve	.....
3 three	...	13 thirteen	.....
4 four	....	14 fourteen	.....
5 five	.....	15 fifteen	.....
6 six	.....	16 sixteen	.....
7 seven	.....	17 seventeen	.....
8 eight	.....	18 eighteen	.....
9 nine	.....	19 nineteen	.....
10 ten	.....	20 twenty	.....

I	one	I	first	XI	eleventh
II	two	II	second	XII	twelfth
III	three	III	third	XIII	thirteenth
IIII	four	IV	fourth	XIV	fourteenth
IIIII	five	V	fifth	XV	fifteenth
IIIIII	six	VI	sixth	XVI	sixteenth
IIIIIII	seven	VII	seventh	XVII	seventeenth
IIIIIIII	eight	VIII	eighth	XVIII	eighteenth
IIIIIIIII	nine	IX	ninth	XIX	nineteenth
IIIIIIIIII	ten	X	tenth	XX	twentieth

EXERCISES.

1 pen	11 marbles	one slate	eleven shillings
2 slates	12 pence	two slates	twelve flowers
3 keys	13 eggs	three dogs	thirteen flies
4 pins	14 pens	four stockings	fourteen nails
5 books	15 boys	five beggars	fifteen knives
6 windows	16 buttons	six ladies	sixteen rabbits
7 candles	17 balls	seven gentlemen	seventeen dishes
8 bottles	18 oxen	eight houses	eighteen children
9 hens	19 ships	nine oranges	nineteen bricks
10 soldiers	20 pounds	ten apples	twenty stones

2 eyes and 2 ears
1 nose and 1 mouth
4 legs and 2 horns
8 fingers and 2 thumbs
20 buttons and 4 needles
10 toes, 8 fingers and 2 thumbs

8 windows and 2 doors
12 slates and 12 pencils
2 dogs and 3 cats
1 cat and 4 mice
1 shilling and 4 pence
1 pound, 2 shillings and 6 pence

three brothers and one sister
one father and one mother
one garden and one play-ground
three coaches and four carts
ten ladies and six gentlemen

twelve girls nine boys and three infants
three sons and four daughters
one watch one key and two seals
one Heaven and one Hell
one God one Christ and one Holy Ghost

ADJECTIVES.

The best initiatory process to shew the nature of the adjective, is perhaps to take a number of wafers of the same size and form, but of various colours. The pupils will see that these objects are all alike, and intended for the same purpose, and that they only differ in colour. This difference the adjective expresses, a red wafer, a yellow wafer, &c. On first going through the following lesson, each example must be illustrated by objects.

It is more disurable to teach fewer examples than are here given, provided they are illustrated, than all these if the attribute cannot be applied.

a red coat	a blue fly	a white house	green cloth
a red shoe	a blue feather	white soap	green worsted
a red shawl	a blue book	white thread	green thread
a red flower	blue flannel	white paper	green wax
a red rose	blue leather	white trousers	green glass
a red string	blue silk	a brown coat	white calico
a red face	blue trousers	a brown skin	whitish calico
a red table	blue paper	a brown fur	white paper
a red door	blue paint	a brown horse	whitish paper
a red feather	blue ink	a brown cow	white marble
red hair	blue eyes	a brown glove	whitish marle
red paper	a black horse	a brown rat	a black face
red cloth	a black man	brown hair	a blackish face
red leather	a black coat	brown cloth	black ink
red wood	a black glove	brown bread	blackish ink
red ink	a black board	brown paper	blue ink
a yellow vest	a black bird	brown paint	bluish ink
a yellow button	a black cat	brown silk	blue paper
a yellow flower	a black sheep	a grey horse	bluish paper
a yellow bird	a black feather	a grey cat	green spectacles
a yellow shoe	a black cow	a grey coat	greenish spectacles
a yellow wafer	a black wafer	a grey hat	a green field
a yellow ribbon	black hair	a grey stone	a greenish field
a yellow skin	black ink	a grey hen	green paint
a yellow napkin	black cloth	a grey snail	greenish paint
a yellow butterfly	black paint	a grey thread	a red wafer
yellow paint	black paper	grey cloth	a reddish wafer
yellow paper	a white stocking	grey hair	a reddish flower
yellow wax	a white shirt	grey paper	reddish hair
yellow butter	a white glove	grey trousers	a yellow wafer
a blue coat	a white flower	a green coat	a yellowish wafer
a blue vest	a white cow	a green leaf	yellow paper
a blue frock	a white hen	a green feather	yellowish paper
a blue cap	a white neckcloth	a green frock	a brown cow
a blue stocking	a white plate	a green bag	a brownish cow
a blue plate	a white sheep	a green room	a brownish horse
a blue flower	a white bowl	a green tree	grey hair
a blue sky	a white rabbit	a green ribbon	greyish hair
a blue dish	a white pig on	green silk	a greyish pony

ADJECTIVES (CONTINUED.)

a drab hat	a striped waistcoat	three black coats
a drab cloak	a striped gown	two black men
a drab bonnet	a striped apron	four black sheep
a drab shawl	striped trousers	seven black birds
drab paper	striped muslin	fifteen black hens
drab cloth	a plaid shawl	seven white hats
drab thread	a plaid neckerchief	five white shirts
a buff waistcoat	a plaid waistcoat	ten white sheep
a buff gown	a plaid cloak	fourteen white plates
a buff wall	plaid stuff	four red napkins
buff shoes	plaid trowse s	seven red flowers
buff leather	a light waistcoat	twelve yellow buttons
a purple frock	a dark waistcoat	three yellow birds
a purple bonnet	a light dress	six blue bonnets
a purple ribbon	a dark dress	five blue frocks
purple leather	light thread	two green chairs
purple paper	dark thread	four green bottles
purple glass	light hair	eleven grey horses
a pink wafer	dark hair	two grey eyes
a pink dress	a spotted frock	eight brown cows
a pink scarf	a spotted neckerchief	two brown rats
pink silk	spotted silk	three drab bonnets
pink paper	a checked pinafore	much pink paper
a scarlet coat	a checked apron	two plaid table-covers
a scarlet ribbon	ruddy cheeks	ten greenish wafers
a scarlet cloak	pale cheeks	many scarlet berries
scarlet berries	a bright day	four chestnut horses
scarlet blossoms	a dull day	three plaid neckerchiefs
a crimson dahlia	clear glass	fifteen checked pinafores
a crimson curtain	dull glass	six dull days
a crimson cushion	a clear day	twelve rusty keys
crimson velvet	a cloudy day	many coloured walls
crimson leather	clear water	red cloth and black leather
a lilac spencer	muddy water	twenty yellow buttons and sixteen red marbles
	a bright key	brown paper and white paper
	a rusty key	seven white shirts and four black neckcloths
	a dirty road	two red tables & three green chairs
	a clean road	a blue coat and white trousers
	dirty boys	seven green jackets and three blue vests
	clean boys	four red coats and two black hats
	coloured walls	six black horses & nine black cows
	painted walls	five grey birds & seven grey hares
	papered walls	three yellowish waistcoats and two black coats
	whitewashed walls	four purple feathers and eight brownish feathers
	dusty walls	four striped waistcoats and six plaid cloaks
	clean walls	three greyish jackets and seven drab waistcoats
lilac paper		
a chestnut pony		
a bay horse		
a piebald horse		
a brindled cow		
yellow soap		
mottled soap		
white soap		
yellowish soap		

ADJECTIVES. (CONTINUED.)

In the Course of lessons on Adjectives the intention has been to take those first that are most evident to the senses, as Colour, Size, Form, and after these and other external qualities, those that require more description.

It will be evident to the teacher that his power of contrasting one object with another will be a valuable aid to the pupil, and it is desirable that as many examples of each quality as can be obtained should be exhibited to the pupils by means of real objects.

It will also be requisite to shew that these terms are relative; — that the word long applied to a pen expresses a different degree of that quality to that which the same word expresses when applied to a desk.

A long desk	narrow cloth	a large hat	one small fat cow
a short desk	broad lace	a small hat	two thick low hedges
a long pencil	narrow lace	a large town	one thin high hedge
a short pencil	a thick pencil	a small town	two long broad roads
long hair	a thin pencil	large types	three deep wide rivers
short hair	a thick coat	small types	one shallow narrow river
long legs	a thin coat	large drawers	one broad high shelf
short legs	thick paste	small drawers	two low narrow gates
a tall boy	thin paste	a tall tree	three round white tables
a short boy	thick porridge	a spreading tree	one fat sow and twelve small pigs
a tall woman	thin porridge	a low tree	one large red cock and six white hens
a short woman	a fat boy	a lofty tree	a large white house and a low red cottage
tall people	a thin boy	a low spire	a large black horse and a small brown cow
short people	a fat cow	a lofty spire	eight long white desks and ten long benches
tall peas	a lean cow	six long desks	twenty thick green trees and fourteen low shrubs
dwarf peas	fat beef	two short desks	two round white tables and twelve large chairs
a high chimney	lean beef	three short boys	seven tall thin men and four tall fat women
a low chimney	fat bacon	ten tall men	three long high shelves and seven short low shelves
a high hedge	lean bacon	two low chimneys	three deep wide rivers and two long broad roads
a low hedge	a deep pond	four high trees	two thin narrow shirts and four thick broad sheets
high houses	a shallow pond	two wide gates	a tall narrow door and a low wide gate
low houses	large scissors	five narrow gates	small lean mutton and large fat beef
high shelves	small scissors	eleven fat boys	
low shelves	a deep pit	six fat cows	
a wide field	a shallow pit	two deep wells	
a narrow field	deep water	one shallow pond	
a wide gate	shallow water	ten big boys	
a narrow gate	a big book	twenty little boys	
wide trousers	a little book	many small types	
narrow trousers	a big boy	few large drawers	
wide doors	a little boy	four large apples	
narrow doors	big bellows	sixteen small onions	
a broad ribbon	little bellows	much fat beef	
a narrow ribbon	a large house	much lean beef	
a broad path	a small house	many low shelves	
a narrow path	a large sheep	few high shelves	
broad cloth	a small sheep	three low trees	

ADJECTIVES. (CONTINUED.)

a hard hand	fine cloth	two hard hands
a soft hand	coarse cloth	much hard bread
hard bread	a wet day	ten cold plates
soft bread	a dry day	four sharp knives
hard wood	wet clothes	two keen razors
soft wood	dry clothes	three rough shells
a hot plate	a wet month	four old jackets
a cold plate	a dry month	many hot days
a hot poker	a warm day	much hot weather
a cold poker	a cool day	four full drawers
a hot day	warm tea	a dozen sour oranges
a cold day	cool tea	six fresh herrings
hot meat	warm plates	a score salt herrings
cold meat	cold plates	five stale loaves
a sharp knife	a dead bird	twenty new loaves
a blunt knife	a living bird	four full tubs
a sharp axe	a dead tree	six empty bowls
a blunt axe	a living tree	a hard hand and a soft hand
sharp shears	new bread	a hot plate and a cold plate
blunt shears	stale bread	smooth yellow paper and
a smooth slate	fresh meat	rough brown paper
a rough slate	stale meat	ten new pupils and many
a smooth shell	moist sugar	old pupils
a rough shell	lump sugar	four new fine towels and six
smooth cloth	a moist day	old fine towels
rough cloth	a dry day	two dry days and four wet
smooth paper	a keen razor	days
rough paper	a blunt razor	six cold days and ten hot days
smooth leather	a prickly leaf	two dead birds and twelve
rough leather	a smooth leaf	living birds
a light book	a dry room	two large full drawers and
a heavy book	a damp room	three small empty drawers
a light staff	a dry shirt	six new little books and two
a heavy staff	a damp shirt	old large books
light clothing	damp walls	three narrow old doors and
heavy clothing	dry walls	five wide new doors
a heavy hat	a full bottle	two low old rooms and three
a light hat	an empty bottle	lofty new rooms
a new coat	full drawers	five hot blue plates and twenty
an old coat	empty drawers	hot white plates
a new book	a sweet orange	two large sharp knives and
an old book	a sour orange	eighteen small blunt knives
a new pupil	sweet milk	hot fat meat and cold lean
an old pupil	sour milk	meat
new milk	a salt herring	hard red wood and soft white
old milk	a fresh herring	wood
a fine towel	salt beef	thin smooth leather and thick
a coarse towel	fresh beef	rough leather

ADJECTIVES. (CONTINUED.)

a round roller	a round flat cheese	a naughty child
a round ruler	a long straight stick	a good boy
a flat ruler	a short flat ruler	a bad boy
a round inkstand	an old round hayrick	a good pen
a square inkstand	a new square hayrick	a bad pen
a round hayrick	a short crooked line	a pretty dog
a square hayrick	a broad straight bridge	an ugly dog
a straight stick	a thick slanting line	a pretty house
a crooked stick	a thin upright line	an ugly house
a straight line	a narrow level road	a rich man
a crooked line	a wide level road	a poor man
straight eyebrows	a short upright chimney	a clever girl
arched eyebrows	a high upright chimney	a stupid girl
a straight bridge	a large square board	a kind mother
an arched bridge	a small oblong box	a kind master
a straight line	a large oblong box	an unkind mother
a zigzag line	a large oval dish	an unkind master
an upright line	a small round plate	a busy boy
a slanting line	a deep round pudding-pan	an idle man
an upright wall	two round black rulers	a sick man
a slanting wall	six white crooked lines	a sick babe
an even road	one thick square book	a healthy man
an uneven road	four black slanting boards	a healthy child]
a level road	two straight lines and four	a deaf boy
a hilly road	crooked lines	a dumb woman
a level field	four oblong windows and	a lame man
an uneven field	one semicircular window	a blind girl
a square board	one slanting floor and	an honest man
an oblong board	many flat floors	a dishonest man
a square book	an even field and an un-	a careful servant
an oblong book	even road	a careless servant
an oblong window	a high upright wall and a	a silly girl
a circular window	low slanting wall	a wise woman
a semicircular window	a straight hedge, a crook-	a sly boy
an oval pudding-pan	ed path and a curved	an open boy
a round pudding-pan	wall	a simple girl
a straight path	an oval dish-cover and a	a cunning girl
a crooked path	round pudding-pan	a lazy man
a curved path	a small oblong window and	an industrious woman
a flat roof	a large oblong window	a polite boy
a sloping roof	a tall round upright pillar,	a polite lady
a flat floor	and a short square up-	a polite gentleman
a slanting floor	right chimney	a vulgar woman
a steep roof	a big old cow a little lean	a vulgar man
a steep cliff	donkey and a small fat	a vulgar boy
a steep hill	sheep	a vulgar servant

ADJECTIVES. (CONTINUED.)

a happy man
 a happy child
 an unhappy child
 a learned man
 an ignorant man
 a sleepy boy
 a wakeful child
 a sleepy child
 a wakeful child
 a drunken husband
 a sober wife
 a modest girl
 an immodest girl
 a bold boy
 a saucy boy
 an impudent boy
 a strong man
 a weak man
 a young lady
 an old lady
 a dear hat
 a cheap hat
 a dear table
 a cheap table
 a noisy dog
 a quiet dog
 fine cloth
 coarse cloth
 fine paper
 coarse paper
 a fine shirt
 a coarse shirt
 a fine engraving
 a common engraving
 green plums
 ripe plums
 green apples
 mellow apples
 a sulky boy
 a pleased boy
 a holy person
 an unholy person
 a proud man
 a haughty man
 an humble man

a good man
 a righteous man
 a wicked man
 an unrighteous man
 a handsome house
 a handsome dog
 an ugly woman
 pleasant weather
 unpleasant weather
 a slated roof
 a tiled roof
 a boarded floor
 a flagged floor
 a paved yard
 a thatched roof
 a naked child
 a clothed child
 a ragged jacket
 an open door
 a closed door
 a mealy potatoe
 a watery potatoe
 rotten wood
 sound wood
 rotten cheese
 sound cheese
 a wholesome plant
 a poisonous plant
 a tame fox
 a wild fox
 an attentive pupil
 a careless pupil
 an inattentive boy
 wet weather
 dry weather
 an easy trade
 a difficult trade
 an easy lesson
 a difficult lesson
 a diligent scholar
 a idle teacher
 a cold country
 a warm country
 a pretty bird
 a common bird

a long good pen
 a little pretty dog
 a young careless servant
 a rich ignorant man
 a poor happy man
 an old quiet dog
 a young noisy dog
 a wet unpleasant day
 a dry paved yard
 a warm thatched roof
 two strong tall men
 three noisy wakeful children
 four careless idle boys
 a thatched roof and a flagged floor
 a cold night and a pleasant day
 a drunken husband and a kind wife
 an unhealthy child and a sick father
 a handsome horse and a bold dog
 a deaf boy and a lame girl
 a deaf dumb and lame boy
 a deaf dumb and blind woman
 an easy trade and an unkind master
 an easy trade and a careless workman
 a ripe apple a sour plum
 and a mellow pear
 an old polite gentleman
 & a young vulgar lady
 a wise child a happy father
 and an attentive mother
 rotten cheese, mealy potatoes and sour apples
 pleasant warm mornings
 and cold foggy nights
 four large pretty birds, six
 small common birds and
 a quiet donkey

ADJECTIVES. (CONTINUED.)

Many Nouns are used as Adjectives for describing other Nouns.

a silk handkerchief	a sandstone rock	a potatoe pie
worsted gloves	a granite mountain	a cream-cheese
a fur cap	a coal mine	a skim-milk cheese
cotton stockings	a mahogany tray	a sago pudding
a linen shirt	a deal table	a game pie
a calico shirt	an oak floor	a pewter spoon
a velveteen jacket	a stone trough	a plaster bust
a cloth waistcoat	an earthen pitcher	a cork leg
a leather cap	a tin can	a rush mat
a muslin neckerchief	a metal saucepan	a wax candle
a corduroy jacket	a copper kettle	a tallow candle
a fustian coat	an iron scraper	an oilskin coat
jean stays	a bronze inkstand	a frieze cloak
a beaver hat	a brass bell-pull	a crape hatband
a wool hat	a silver candlestick	a pasteboard box
a gingham tippet	a lead cistern	a black-lead pencil
a holland pinafore	tin steamers	a whalebone brush
a fur muff	a tutania tea-pot	a diamond pin
a straw bonnet	a german-silver spoon	a pearl necklace
a stuff skirt	a pinchbeck watch-case	coral earrings
moreen curtains	a paper tray	jet bracelets
dimity bed-hangings	steel snuffers	a carnelian brooch
a silk apron	a zinc spout	agate bracelets
a flannel waistcoat	an ebony ruler	a seal-skin cap
an ivory comb	a box rule	a dog-skin cap
a bone salt-spoon	a rosewood work-box	a satin stock
a horn comb	a wax doll	angola stockings
a tortoiseshell comb	a plum cake	list shoes
a feather bed	a seed cake	tape shoestrings
a hair mattress	a rice pudding	galloon shoestrings
a straw paliasse	a jam pudding	a mud cottage
a slated stable	an apple tart	a mutton cap
a tiled cottage	a rhubarb tart	a gravel walk
a thatched barn	a gooseberry pudding	a camel's hair pencil
a birch rod	a currant pudding	a wash leather waistcoat
elm chairs	a meat pie	a merino neckerchief
a glass inkstand	a pigeon pie	lamb's wool stockings
china tea-cups	a damson tart	chintz chair-covers
a marble bust	salt butter	a wood engraving
a stone house	milk porridge	a steel engraving
a brick house	oatmeal porridge	a copperplate engraving
a log house	an apple dumpling	a water colour drawing
a turf cabin	a pork pie	an oil painting
a limestone rock	salt beef	a cast-iron wheel

NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

A HOUSE AND ITS PARTS.

hall-door	chimney	storeroom	partition	rafter
fansash	spout	larder	room	beam
steps	kitchen	brew-house	ceiling	gutter
scraper	pantry	coal-hole	cornice	sash
knocker	scullery	dining-room	door	lime
bell	cellar	parlour	bar	clay
hall	bake house	bed room	bolt	mortar
lobby	laundry	water-closet	closet	lath
roof	wash house	lumber room	shelf	plaster
a wide door		a lead spout		a close bedroom
stone steps		a wooden spout		a thin partition
an iron scraper		a large kitchen		a thick beam
a brass knocker		a cool pantry		a lead gutter
a long lobby		an airy cellar		a strong bar
a flat roof		a clean laundry		a high ceiling
a sloping roof		a dry storeroom		a narrow shelf
a tall chimney		a square coal hole		a pretty cornice

KITCHEN FURNITURE.

fire	warming-pan	skewer	plate	tea-cup
range	roasting-jack	pot-hook	dish	saucer
dresser	coffee-pot	fender	dish-cover	tea-pot
candlestick	ladle	fire irons	tea-cloth	cream jug
table	toasting-fork	smoke jack	steam-kettle	sugar-basin
tray	rolling-pin	spit	mug	water-can
tea-kettle	grater	bellows	jug	milk-pan
a coal fire		a iron tea-kettle		a large fire
a wood fire		a long ladle		blue plates
a peat fire		a rough grate		white plates
a large grate		a short skewer		china plates
a long table		a long skewer		blue dishes
a mahogany tray		a wire skewer		tin dish-covers
a japanned tray		a sooty pot hook		plated dish-covers
		a bright fender		clean tea-cloths

SCULLERY

sink	bucket	gridiron	tinder-box	tap
dish-cloth	plate-rack	pitcher	flint	knife board
swill-tub	saucepan	colander	steel	hand-brush
towel	frying-pan	fishkettle	matches	dust pan
bowl	dripping-pan	boiler	lantern	pump
a stone sink		a painted bucket		a small boiler
a greasy dish cloth		a broken handle		a horn lantern
a dirty swill-tub		a tin dripping pan		an old hand brush
a clean towel		a new gridiron		a japanned dust-pan
a soiled towel		a stone pitcher		a rusty steel

NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

CELLAR.

barrel	bottle	funnel	porter	vinegar
hoop	bottle-rack	mallet	mead	rum
bung	net	wine-bin	wine	gin
tap	cork	ale	cider	brandy
taphole	corkscrew	beer	perry	whiskey
an ale barrel		a cork net		red wine
a wine pipe		a large funnel		home-made wine
a rusty hoop		a wooden mallet		foreign wine
a large bung		strong ale		sour ale
an easy tap		table beer		musty ale
a wine bottle		small beer		old ale
a porter bottle		white wine		new ale

PANTRY.

cupboard	treacle	bread-basket	butter-boat	cake
safe	coffee-mill	pudding-pan	sauce-tureen	pie
chopping-block	chopping-bowl	candle-box	scales	tart
cleaver	chopping-knife	bottle-brush	weights	pudding
plate-basket	tea-canister	sugar-nippers	flour	biscuit
market-basket	coffee-canister	lemon-squeezers	bread	oatmeal
treacle-can	cheese-waggon	vegetable-dish	loaf	flour bin
a sharp cleaver		an open bread basket		a plum cake
a heavy chopping-block		an oval pudding-pan		new bread
a light plate-basket		a round pudding-pan		stale bread
a covered market-basket		a stiff bottle-brush		white bread
thick treacle		steel sugar-nippers		brown bread
thin treacle		covered vegetable-dishes		a currant tart
a square tea-canister		a tin candle-box		a rice pudding
a round tea-canister		an apple pie		fine flour

WASH HOUSE AND LAUNDRY.

washing-tub	lid	clothes-line	italian-iron	drying-closet
dolly-tub	soap	clothes-horse	heater	ironing-stove
washing-machine	soft soap	mangle	ironing-blanket	powder-blue
wringing machine	soda	mangle-cloths	iron-stand	stone-blue
boiler	clothes-basket	smoothing-iron	ironing-table	starch
a larger boiler	white soap			a hot drying-closet
hot water	an iron mangle			thick starch
cold water	a wood mangle			thin starch
soft water	a bright italian-iron			clean water
hard water	a thick ironing-blanket			dirty water
yellow soap	clean mangle-cloths			a hot iron
mottled soap	a round iron-stand			a cold iron

NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

STORE ROOM.

bacon	raisins	vinegar	mace	candles
ham	currants	mustard	cloves	apples
hung beef	sugar	spice	cinnamon	pears
cheese	loaf sugar	ginger	caraways	herbs
rice	preserves	pimento	nutmeg	sage
sago	pickles	pepper	scales	mint
arrow-root	salt	pepper-corn	weights	thyme

fat bacon		pickled walnuts		mould candles
old cheese		preserved damsons		dried herbs
new cheese		preserved gooseberries		hot spices
pickled onions		preserved currants		preserved plums
pickled cucumbers		bright scales		sweet spices
pickled cabbage		copper weights		pungent spices

DINING ROOM.

dining-table	mustard-cruet	steel	wine-glass	pie
table-cloth	mustard-spoon	table-knife	knife-box	tart
side-table	tumbler	table-fork	ale-glass	salad
side-board	soup-tureen	table-spoon	soup	fruit
chair	soup-ladle	gravy-spoon	fish	ale
cruet-stand	soup-plate	salt-cellar	fowl	wine
vinegar-cruet	carving-knife	salt-spoon	meat	water
pepper-cruet	carving-fork	decanter	pudding	spirits
a round dining-table		silver forks		a soft carpet
an oblong dining-table		steel forks		cold meat
a high chair		a silver table-spoon		hot meat
a silver cruets-stand		glass salt-cellars		roasted meat
a china tureen		silver salt-cellars		boiled fowl
a sharp carving-knife		a cut decanter		an apple tart
ivory-handled table-knives		a plain decanter		ripe fruit

PARLOUR.

table	screen	stove	work-box	writing desk
table-cover	bell-rope	poker	cotton	cabinet
table-cloth	net pull	tongs	thread	window curtain
table	carpet	shovel	needles	blind
flower-stand	hearth-rug	ash-pan	needle-case	buffet
nower-pot	chimney-piece	fender	pincushion	music stool
card-rack	vase	work-table	thimble	pianoforte
a mahogany table		moreen curtains		an inlaid work box
a rosewood table		a silk hand screen		a silver thimble
a marble table		worsted bell ropes		a gold thimble
a damask table cover		a marble chimney piece		an ebony cabinet
an easy arm chair		a china vase		linen blinds
a painted flower-stand		a polished stove		a pretty buffet
a chintz sofa cover		steel fire irons		a valuable pianoforte

NOUNS AND ADJECTIVES.

BED ROOM.

bed	pillow	dressing-case	hat-brush	closet
bedstead	bolster	razor	flesh-brush	wardrobe
post	bed	strop	basin-stand	band-box
tester	mattress	shaving-box	basin	curtain-pin
bed-hangings	bed-candlestick	shaving-brush	soap	tassel
valance	extinguisher	hair-brush	towel	window-curtain
counterpane	snuffers	comb	foot-pan	bell
bed-quilt	dressing-table	tooth-brush	bedside carpet	boot-jack
blanket	toilet-cover	nail-brush	drawers	watch-fob
sheet	looking-glass	clothes-brush	night-lamp	water-bottle
a four post bed		clean sheets	a stiff hair-brush	
moreen hangings		soft pillows	a soft shaving-brush	
dimity hangings		a hair mattress	a leather dressing case	
chintz hangings		a wool mattress	a rosewood dressing case	
mahogany posts		a straw paliasse	a painted towel horse	
a painted cornice		a brass candlestick	mahogany drawers	
a carved cornice		a silver candlestick	brass curtain pins	
a white counterpane		a plated candlestick	a light band box	
a thick quilt		linen sheets	a leather hat box	
a calico blind		a muslin toilet-cover	a coarse towel	
warm blankets		scented soap	a fine towel	

LIBRARY.

book-case	bust	inkstand	octavo	portfolio
book	figure	pens	duodecimo	globe
volume	bracket	ink	time-piece	compass
manuscript	drawer	sealing-wax	reading-desk	taper
chair	chessboard	wafer	compasses	cabinet
table	engraving	paper	letter	thermometer
steps	painting	folio	postage-stamp	microscope
picture	lamp	quarto	ruler	telescope
a glazed book-case		rosewood frames	a folio volume	
an open book		oak frames	a quarto volume	
closed books		a candle lamp	an octavo volume	
a marble bust		an oil lamp	a marble time-piece	
a plaster bust		a glass inkstand	a round ruler	
an old painting		a silver inkstand	a flat ruler	
a modern painting		new pens and old pens	a wax taper	
gilt frames		red sealing-wax	a mahogany cabinet	
a maple frame		black sealing-wax	plain envelopes	
a painted frame		coloured wafers	postage envelopes	
a pencil drawing		black wafers	a penny stamp	
a coloured drawing		an engraved seal	a two-penny stamp	

FARM YARD, AND FARM OBJECTS.

farm-house	skimmer	winnower	cornrick	wood-stack
stable	churn	grain	sheaf	cart-shed
haychamber	sieve	chaff	stacker	cart
gate	barn	dunghill	thatcher	carter
stable-boy	thresher	piggery	labourer	wheel
cowhouse	} flail	swine herd	pump	wheel-barrow
byre		bucket	well	farmer
cow-boy	straw	poultry-house	duck-pond	woodcutter
dairy	dog-kennel	poultry-woman	pitchfork	hammer
dairymaid	bag	dovecote	bill-hook	wedge
pail	sack	hayrick	rat-catcher	axe
milkpan	winnow	hay	rat-trap	timber

an old farm house	a thatched barn	a high dove-cote	a short pitchfork
an airy stable	a strong thresher	a square hayrick	a sharp bill-hook
a dry hay-chamber	an old flail	sweet hay	a cunning rat-catcher
a broken gate	good corn	a round corn-rick	a steel rat-trap
an attentive cow-boy	musty corn	large sheaves	a high wood-stack
a cool dairy	dry straw	an industrious labourer	an open cart-shed
a cleanly dairymaid	damp straw	an idle labourer	a large cart
a clean pail	an old bag	an easy pump	a small cart
shallow milk-pans	new bags	a hard pump	a broken wheel
a tin skimmer	a warm piggery	a deep well	a heavy wheelbarrow
a standing churn	a dirty bucket	a stagnant pond	a fat farmer
a barrel churn	a dark poultry house	a long pitchfork	steel wedges

COUNTRY, AND COUNTRY OBJECTS.

tower	cliff	cornfield	passenger	powder
cottage	light-house	binder	chaise	shot-belt
alehouse	ship	gleaner	postillion	game-bag
inn	shore	hayfield	gig	fisherman
sign	bay	haymaker	horseman	angler
windmill	road	hay	bridle	canal
sail	highway	harrow	saddle	orchard
watermill	footpath	dibble	stirrups	wood
water-wheel	toll-bar	dibbler	waggon	plantation
mansion	turnpike	labourer	waggoner	nursery
lodge	mile-stone	coach	pony	garden
avenue	guide-post	coachman	fowler	greenhouse
park	village	reins	fowling-piece	vineyard

an ancient tower	a sandy shore	an uneven hayfield	a stout bridle
a modern cottage	a rocky shore	active haymakers	an easy saddle
a small alehouse	a muddy shore	new-mown hay	plated stirrups
a large inn	a wide bay	a loaded coach	a covered waggon
a creaking sign	a wide road	a fat coachman	an open waggon
a new windmill	a raised footpath	long reins	a grey pony
torn sails	a painted toll-bar	good horses	a double-barreled gun
a fine mansion	a large village	dusty passengers	an empty game-bag
a low lodge	a small village	wet passengers	a copper powder-flask
a winding avenue	a pretty village	an old chaise	a leather shot-belt
a bare cliff	level cornfields	a new gig	an extensive orchard
a high lighthouse	young gleaners	a tired horseman	a thick wood

TIMES, SEASONS, &c.

year	dawn	yesterday	June	half past twelve
month	sun-rise	to-morrow	July	a quarter to one
week	aurora	Sunday	August	New years day
day	morning	Monday	September	Twelfth day
hour	forenoon	Tuesday	October	Shrove-tide
half-hour	noon	Wednesday	November	Lent
quarter	mid-day	Thursday	December	Good Friday
minute	afternoon	Friday	one o'clock	Lady day
second	sunset	Saturday	two o'clock	Easter
season	twilight	January	three o'clock	Whitsuntide
Spring	evening	February	four o'clock	Midsummer
Summer	night	March	ten o'clock	Michaelmas
Autumn	midnight	April	eleven o'clock	Martinmas
Winter	to-day	May	twelve o'clock	Christmas

a short month	a cloudy day	a dark night	a dry October
a long month	a cold day	a starlight night	a dark month
a wet week	a cold summer	a moonlight night	a light month
a dry day	a wet summer	a holy day	a hot month
a busy hour	a bright morning	a working day	a cold month
a warm season	a dull forenoon	a calm morning	a wet month
a cold season	a fine afternoon	a stormy night	a windy month
a wet season	a cool evening	a wet February	a foggy month
a dry season	a frosty night	a windy March	a misty morning
a mild day	a foggy night	a hot May	a tempestuous day

NATURAL APPEARANCES, &c.

earth	tempest	frost	spring	cliff
sun	whirlwind	ice	river	moor
sky	calm	cold	brook	rock
firmament	water	heat	stream	cave
stars	clouds	light	mountain	sea
moon	showers	darkness	wood	ocean
constellation	fog	daylight	tree	wave
planet	mist	starlight	lake	tide
rainbow	dew	moonlight	pond	foam
aurora borealis	rain	volcano	waterfall	East
weather	thunder	avalanche	cascade	West
air	lightning	glacier	torrent	North
wind	snow	iceberg	field	South
gale	hail	waterspout	meadow	North-pole
storm	sleet	whirlpool	hedge	South-pole
<i>pure</i>	<i>small</i>	<i>thick</i>	<i>river</i>	<i>house</i>
a clear sky	a high wind	a thick mist	a high mountain	
a cloudy sky	a cold wind	low thunder	a still lake	
a full moon	an east wind	near thunder	a raging sea	
bright stars	a west wind	distant thunder	a pretty waterfall	
twinkling stars	a north wind	vivid lightning	a loud torrent	
near stars	a south wind	forked lightning	fertile fields	
distant stars	a great storm	sheet lightning	barren mountains	
a splendid rainbow	dark clouds	a deep snow	a steep cliff	
windy weather	light clouds	a hard frost	a rugged rock	
rainy weather	passing clouds	thick ice	a dark cave	
settled weather	a sudden shower	a rapid river	the wide ocean	
pure air	a heavy shower	a slow river	the round earth	
impure air	a light shower	a small brook	the bright sun	

OCCUPATIONS, TOOLS, MATERIALS AND PRODUCTIONS.

Ploughman plough scil	grindstone flour meal bran pollard oatmeal barley-meal	<i>whey</i> <i>curd</i> Confectioner jar patty-pan preserves tarts sweetmeats cake biscuit	<i>yeast</i> grains hops	<i>lime</i> sand mortar wall house cottage
Harrower harrow weeds	Baker trough oven peel bin mop bread loaf roll yeast dough	Apothecary drawers bottle phial gallipot draught lotion plaster blister pill powder	Maltster malt shovel cistern kiln malt-mill barley malt	Brickmaker mould spud kiln clay-mill clay brick tile
Sower seed-basket dibble drill seed corn wheat barley beans clover	Butcher knife steel cleaver axe steelyard meat beef mutton veal lamb pork	Druggist mortar pestle drugs	Sawyer saw sawpit chalk-line chalk sawdust plank board timber	Wood-cutter axe bill wedge timber cord-wood fire-wood log
Reaper sickle sheaf stook band stack	Grocer counter scales weights canister hogshead sugar currants raisins tea coffee cocoa rice treacle	Chemist furnace still retort lamp pot crucible	Carpenter bench saw chisel plane screwdriver hammer rule gimlet wood glue nail shavings table form shelf cupboard box	Smith hearth fire bellows hammer tongs anvil punch file drill pliers iron steel horse-shoe spike staple holdfast
Mower scythe whetstone strickle grass	Milkmaid milk-can milk	Fruiterer basket fruit	Mason square mallet chisel plumb-line marble stone flag cement	Wheelwright adze spokeshave auger mallet cart waggon wheelbarrow
Haymaker hay-rake hay-fork hay-cock hay hayrick	Dairymaid churn milkpan cheese-press cream butter cheese buttermilk	Fishmonger hamper fish-basket fish shell-fish	Bricklayer hod trowel shovel ladder level brick	Painter brush palette-knife stone muller kettle paint
Gardener spade rake fork hoe line shears setting-stick pruning-knife fruit flower vegetable manure		Fisherman boat net line hook bait float		
Carter cart		Brewer barrel copper wash-tub vat beer ale moutan		
Waggoner waggon				
Miller mill sail water-wheel				

OCCUPATIONS &c (CONTINUED)

Glazier cratch diamond putty-knife glass putty pane window	Shoemaker last awl size-stick leather shoe boot slipper	<i>fork</i> Cooper drawknife tub barrel bucket bowl	screw-'ap gun pistol	forceps lancet tooth ivory
Plumber ladle soldering-iron scraper lead solder spout pipe	Hatter block boiler dyetub felt fur silk wool dye hat	Sweep brush bag soot	Japanner brush stove japan gold-leaf tray	Ropemaker wheel ropewalk hemp string cord rope tar-band
Plasterer trowel hand-board smooth-board plaster cornice ceiling	Tailor shears needle measure goose sleeve-board buckram silk thread cloth velveteen justian clothes botton	Slater ladder pin	Sailor ship boat oar sail helm compass rope rigging tar oakum	Straw-hat-maker mill block straw-needle straw-plat hat bonnet
Turner lathe gouge guage callipers bed-post roller		Tanner beam knife tan-pit hide leather bark	Soldier gun rifle sword bayonet cartridge gunpowder	Dressmaker scissors bodkin thimble gingham print stuff velvet dress satin cloak
Saddler awl nail knife needle pincers leather saddle harness bridle strap horse-hair	Weaver loom shuttle yarn web cloth	Paviour paving-hammer boulder	Bookbinder press needle pastebrush plough paste millboard leather calico glue	Tinner hammer solderingiron solder tin brass copper zinc saucepan candlestick tea-kettle
Hairdresser scissors comb curling-irons block wig	Potter mould lathe furnace potters-clay basin cup jug	Collier pick wedge safety-lamp coal	Printer case type chase press roller stick ink	Jeweller file vice ring brooch seal bracelet gold silver gem diamond
Barber razor shaving-box brush hone strop soap	Cutter wheel grindstone steel iron horn bone knife	Founder furnace ladle mould pattern metal boiler casting stove	Engraver graver burin copperplate box-wood steel-plate engraving	
		Type-founder furnace matrix meta. type	Dentist toothkey	
		Glassbower blowpipe compasses shears glass bottle tumbler		
		Gunsmith drill bit file		

GENERAL NAMES.

<i>Stones &c.</i>	<i>Forest tree.</i>	<i>tea</i>	<i>leek</i>	<i>stem</i>
marble	oak	currant	turnip	stalk
limestone	elm	gooseberry	carrot	juice
chalk	ash	biberry	parsnip	sap
marl	larch	myrtle	radish	fibre
clay	pine	box	celery	pith
slate	fir	juniper	artichoke	mast
quartz	birch	rose	seacale	<i>Beasts.</i>
flint	beech	rosemary	asparagus	ape
	lime	buckthorn	horse-radish	baboon
<i>Salts.</i>	chestnut	hawthorn	beet	monkey
salt petre	willow	guelder-rose	cucumber	orang-otang
potash	walnut	cistus	gourd	lemur
soda	mahogany	hazel	mustard	bat
salt	alder	heath	cress	elephant
borax	cork	<i>Flowers.</i>	onion	rhinoceros
alum	poplar	pink	<i>Herbs.</i>	walrus
vitriol	yew	tulip	parsley	ant-eater
<i>Combustibles,</i>	cedar	wallflower	mint	manis
sulphur	cypress	violet	sage	sloth
diamond	maple	hyacinth	fennel	armadillo
amber	acacia	polyanthus	balm	cat
turf, peat,	<i>Fruit-tree.</i>	primrose	rue	mole
black lead	apple	daffodil	marjoram	weasel
bitumen	pear	hollyhock	horehound	hedgehog
<i>Metals.</i>	plum	lily	tansy	ferret
platina	damson	iris	thyme	polecat
gold	fig	sunflower	liquorice	raccoon
quicksilver	peach	lupin	camomile	otter
copper	apricot	poppy	valerian	dog
lead	nectarine	larkspur	feverfew	fox
tin	cherry	dahlia	wormwood	wolf
iron	orange	cactus	anise	hyena
zinc	nut	crocus	nettle	tiger
arsenic	mulberry	anemone	hyssop	leopard
<i>mixed metals.</i>	palm	ranunculus	marigold	bear
brass	vine	convolvulus	<i>Parts of</i>	kangaroo
bronze	lemon	balsam	<i>Plants.</i>	opossum
pinchbeck	walnut	<i>Culinary</i>	trunk	lion
german silver	bread fruit	<i>vegetables.</i>	branch	jackall
pewter	<i>Shrubs.</i>	cabbage	bark	panther
<i>Rocks.</i>	holly	cauliflower	root	seal
granite	honeysuckle	lettuce	bud	mouse
porphyry	laburnum	bean	leaf	dormouse
basalt	broom	pea	blossom	rat
sandstone	ivy	kidney-bean	fruit	squirrel
	coffee	potato	seed	guinea-pig
				rabbit

GENERAL NAMES.

<i>Beasts</i>	hoopoe	lapwing	roach	spring fly
<i>Continued.</i>	roller	snipe	tench	scorpion
hare	kingfisher	waterhen	haddock	bee
beaver	raven	woodcock	whiting	wasp
porcupine	crow	coot	mackerel	ox fly
bison	rook	wren	perch	house fly
ox	jackdaw	plover	chub	gnat
buffalo	woodpecker	heron	trout	<i>Worms.</i>
sheep	wren	bittern	flounder	earthworm
goat	hedge-sparrow	crane	sole	slug
chamois	canary-bird	stork	plaice	snail
antelope	robin	spoonbill	salmon-trout	leech
roe-buck	blackbird	duck	turbot	starfish
rein-deer	blackcap	goose	bream	coral
stag	nightingale	swan	salmon	<i>Parts of</i>
musk	wagtail	pelican	cod	<i>Animals.</i>
elk	fieldfare	teal	carp	hide
camel	skylark	widgeon	john doree	horn
dromedary	thrush	stormy petrel	ling	tusk
giraffe	sparrow	cormorant	pike	hoof
hippopotamus	linnet	<i>Reptiles.</i>	eel	claw
horse	gold-finch	boa	flying fish	trunk
zebra	bunting	snake	swordfish	snout
ass	yellowhammer	rattlesnake	<i>Shell-fishes.</i>	mane
mule	titmouse	viper	shrimp	quill
hog	bullfinch	asp	prawn	wool
tapir	green linnet	blindworm	crab	fur
<i>Birds.</i>	grosbeak	turtle	lobster	hair
sparrow-hawk	cross-bill	tortoise	periwinkle	bristle
buzzard	swallow	frog	admiral	scale
kite	martin	toad	muscle	down
falcon	swift	chameleon	cockle	feather
goshawk	sandmartin	lizard	limpet	shell
owl	pigeon	crocodile	whelk	spur
merlin	wood-pigeon	alligator	oyster	beak
eagle	cock & hen	<i>Fishes.</i>	snipe	fin
condor	guinea fowl	shark	<i>Insects.</i>	gills
vulture	turkey	sturgeon	beetle	gossamer
bird of paradise	pea-cock	sawfish	cockroach	sting
humming-bird	pheasant	skate	locust	fang
parrot	partridge	torpedo	cricket	skull
parroquet	quail	toad fish	grasshopper	talon
cockatoo	grouse	minnow	bug	whisker
macaw	bustard	sprat	butterfly	bill
toucan	black cock	anchovy	moth	bladder
jay	corn crake	herring	dragonfly	heart
cuckoo	casowary	smelt	ephemera	gizzard
magpie	ostrich			

GENERAL NAMES.

In going through the following lesson on General Terms it will be the business of the teacher to extend the list of words under each head. It is not intended to give a complete Vocabulary either of the General Terms or of specific names of objects. This must be left for a class exercise, the Pupils to supply the more common examples, and the Teacher those less known.

<i>Person.</i>	<i>Man servant.</i>	<i>State of Man.</i>		<i>Number.</i>
Mary——.	butler	infancy	caustic	one (1)
John——.	footman	childhood	bark	two (2)
Earl——.	coachman	youth	alum	fifty (50)
Mr——.	gardener	manhood	<i>Vice.</i>	ninety four (94)
Lady C.	<i>Woman</i>	<i>Posture.</i>	cruelty	<i>Weight.</i>
The Queen	<i>Servant.</i>	sitting	drunkenness	ounce
<i>Name.</i>	housekeeper	kneeling	pride	pound
John	cook	lying	dishonesty	stone
William	housemaid	leaning	<i>Virtue.</i>	ton
Johnson	laundry-maid	<i>Gesture.</i>	meekness	<i>Measure.</i>
Jones	<i>Labourer</i>	rising	gratitude	inch
Mary	ploughman	courtesying	humility	foot
Elizabeth	cow-boy	bowing	temperance	yard
<i>Title.</i>	thrasher	<i>Action.</i>	<i>Crime,</i>	peck
emperor	carter	walking	rebellion	quart
king	<i>Mechanic.</i>	striking	theft	<i>Money.</i>
queen	brazier	creeping	murder	farthing
prince	founder	swimming	forgery	penny
princess	joiner	<i>Sense.</i>	<i>Fault.</i>	sovereign
duke	smith	hearing	carelessness	Five pound } note }
sir	<i>Teacher.</i>	seeing	idleness	<i>Coin.</i>
<i>Trade.</i>	schoolmaster	smelling	slovenliness	half-penny
tailor	assistant	tasting	inattention	sixpence
mason	Mr.—	touching	<i>Country.</i>	crown
smith	Miss—	<i>Passion.</i>	England	half-sovereign
carpenter	<i>Pupil.</i>	anger	Scotland	<i>Time.</i>
hatter	boy	joy	Ireland	year
<i>Profession</i>	girl	grief	France	month
clergyman	William	fear	<i>County.</i>	Warwickshire
physician	James	envy	Lanarkshire	week
lawyer	Mary	love	Yorkshire	day
teacher	<i>Clergyman.</i>	hatred	Antrim	hour
<i>Art</i>	Dr——	<i>Disease.</i>	<i>City.</i>	minute
reading	The Rev. J.—	ague	Canterbury	<i>Season.</i>
writing	Mr——	asthma	York	Spring
drawing	<i>Physician.</i>	chilblain	Glasgow	Summer
grammar	Dr.——	consumption	Dublin	Autumn
sculpture	Dr.J.——	cough	Edinburgh	<i>Month</i>
<i>Science</i>	<i>Mankind.</i>	eruption	<i>Town.</i>	January
arithmetic	man	fever	Liverpool	February
geography	woman	measles	Leeds	March
geometry	boy	palsy	Paisley	<i>Day.</i>
music	girl	ucler	Limerick	Sunday
botany	infant	<i>Medicine.</i>	<i>Village.</i>	Monday
zoology	<i>People</i>	senna	Carlton	Tuesday
<i>Occupation.</i>	Englishman	castor-oil	Auburn	<i>Holiday.</i>
reading	Spaniard	rhubarb	<i>Form.</i>	Christmas-day
working	Jew	jalep	circle	Good Friday
sewing	Turk	calomel	triangle	Easter
gardening	America	salts	square	New-year's day

GENERAL NAMES.

<i>Game</i>	<i>Flame</i>	<i>Machine.</i>	<i>Bulb</i>	Glasgow
ball	candle	pump	tulip	Heaven
cricket	gas	steam-engine	onion	America
chess	lamp	fire-engine	crocus	<i>Exercise.</i>
marbles	fire	<i>Utensil.</i>	<i>Root.</i>	walking
<i>Amusement.</i>	<i>Creature</i>	pail	potato	riding
dancing	man	milkpan	carrot	running
fencing	animal	grater	beet	jumping
bowling	plant	skimmer	radish	<i>Book.</i>
<i>Event.</i>	sun	<i>Vessel.</i>	<i>Quadruped</i>	bible
birth	sky	tub	wolf	dictionary
death	<i>Being.</i>	barrel	rabbit	grammar
battle	GOD	bucket	horse	copybook
marriage	Angel	cask	<i>Biped.</i>	<i>Quality.</i>
<i>Food.</i>	man	<i>Weapon.</i>	man	strength
bread	animal	sword	bird	goodness
meat	plant	bludgeon	<i>Land Bird.</i>	fatness
broth	<i>Creator.</i>	dagger	pea-cock	sweetness
pie	GOD	dirk	pheasant	hardness
<i>Beverage</i>	<i>Building.</i>	<i>Likeness</i>	eagle	<i>Relation.</i>
water	house	profile	sparrow	father
wine	castle	portrait	<i>Water Bird.</i>	mother
beer	church	bust	duck	uncle
<i>Liquid.</i>	bridge	<i>Picture.</i>	teal	cousin
milk	<i>Possession</i>	painting	goose	<i>Letter:</i>
water	land	engraving	<i>Lana.</i>	A
treacle	house	drawing	garden	B
whiskey	horse	<i>Spice.</i>	field	C
<i>Clothing</i>	money	pepper	mountain	M
coat	<i>Carriage.</i>	ginger	<i>Water.</i>	<i>Vowels.</i>
waistcoat	coach	nutmeg	well	A
frock	cart	<i>Berry.</i>	pond	E
shirt	wheelbarrow	gooseberry	lake	I
<i>Substance</i>	gig	currant	river	O
iron	<i>Road</i>	grape	sea	U
clay	highway	<i>Evergreen.</i>	<i>State of Water.</i>	<i>Consonant.</i>
wood	footpath	laurel	hail	B
wool	lane	box	snow	D
<i>Thing.</i>	by-road	privet	ice	F
nail	<i>Instrument.</i>	ivy	mist	<i>Syllable.</i>
pin	telescope	<i>Nut</i>	foam	con-
chalk	globe	filbert	vapour	firm-
tack	compasses	walnut	cloud	-ing
lock	compass	almond	rain	<i>Word.</i>
bolt	<i>Musical</i>	cocoa	dew	man.
<i>Fabric</i>	<i>Instrument</i>	<i>Grain</i>	<i>Meteor.</i>	desk
linen	flute	wheat	rainbow	pencil
woollen	drum	barley	halo	<i>Sentence.</i>
calico	trumpet	rye	aurora	God is good.
paper	piano forte	oats	<i>Place.</i>	sugar is sweet.
<i>Orb</i>	<i>Tool.</i>	<i>Weed</i>	school	I have a hat.
earth	spade	chickweed	home	<i>Stop.</i>
sun	file	groundsel	garden	comma (,)
moon	axe	dandelion	field	semi-colon (;)
star	fork	dock	street	colon (:)
planet	rake	thistle	London	period (.)

GENERAL NAMES.

PARTS.

<i>Of Man.</i>	body	<i>Ship</i>	<i>Knife.</i>	<i>Tree.</i>
head	legs	deck	blade	root
body	<i>Country.</i>	helm	handle	trunk
hands	country	anchor	spring	sap
eyes	city	sail	point	<i>Apple.</i>
<i>Limb.</i>	village	<i>Steamboat.</i>	edge	peel
arm	road	engine	<i>Watch.</i>	stalk
leg	river	chimney	case	core
<i>Feature.</i>	mountain	cabin	dial	pippin
nose	plain	paddle	hand	<i>Plum.</i>
mouth	<i>Town.</i>	<i>Table.</i>	wheel	juice
forehead	house	top	spring	stone
lips	hotel	legs	glass	kernel
<i>Beast.</i>	street	castors	<i>Pump.</i>	skin
horn	court	<i>Drawer.</i>	pipe	<i>Hour.</i>
hoof	hospital	knob	handle	half-hour
tail	school	inside	bucket	quarter
hide	<i>Church.</i>	front	<i>Kettle.</i>	minute
<i>Horse.</i>	steeple	<i>Desk.</i>	lid	<i>Day.</i>
mane	aisle	frame	body	forenoon
side	bell	back	handle	afternoon
knee	pulpit	front	spout	morn ng
fetlock	<i>House.</i>	hinge	<i>Bottle.</i>	evening
<i>Lion.</i>	room	<i>Box.</i>	inside	night
leg	story	lid	outside	hour
claws	closet	lock	cork	<i>Month.</i>
mane	chimney	side	neck	week
belly	<i>Room.</i>	inside	<i>Boo't.</i>	fortnight
<i>Bird.</i>	floor	outside	back	day
wings	ceiling	<i>Lock.</i>	leaf	<i>Year.</i>
tail	wall	handle	page	season
feathers	fire	spring	back	month
bill	<i>Door.</i>	bolt	side	week
<i>Eagle.</i>	frame	<i>Chair.</i>	<i>Coat.</i>	<i>Stone.</i>
talons	lock	seat	collar	half-stone
beak	pannel	back	back	pound
eyes	<i>Window.</i>	stave	cuffs	<i>Pound.</i>
<i>Fish.</i>	shutter	<i>Sofa.</i>	button	half-pound
fin	sash	eat	<i>Frock.</i>	ounce
gill	pane	back	waist	<i>Peck.</i>
scales	<i>Stable.</i>	cushion	sleeves	half-peck
bladder	manger	castor	skirt	quarter
<i>Whale.</i>	rack	<i>Bel.</i>	string	pint
skin	stall	post	frill	<i>Yard.</i>
jaw	<i>Coach.</i>	curtain	<i>Hat.</i>	half-yard
blubber	body	tester	crown	quarter
<i>Insect.</i>	step	<i>Candle.</i>	brim	nail
wing	door	snuff	nap	<i>Foot.</i>
antenna	wheel	wick	band	half-foot
sting	pole	tallow	<i>Shoe.</i>	quarter
thorax	<i>Wheel.</i>	<i>Gun.</i>	sole	inch
<i>Spider.</i>	spoke	stock	heel	<i>Inch</i>
head	nave	lock	binding	half-inch
mouth	tire	barrel	welt	quarter
feelers	axle	spring	quarter	eighth

GENERAL NAMES.

QUALITIES.

<i>Being.</i>	good	soft	semi-transparent	<i>Sound.</i>
finite	bad	salt	porous	ringing
infinite	rebellious	fresh	tough	hissing
holy	<i>Animal</i>	brackish	elastic	articulate
unholy	useful	putrid	absorbent	whistling
malignant	wild	stagnant	stiff	groaning
wicked	tame	spring	friable	whispering
fallen	fierce	medicinal	dry	<i>Noise.</i>
malicious	gentle	<i>Timber</i>	wet	rumbling
benevolent	living	durable	flexible	loud
mortal	dead	staky	durable	jarring
immortal	mischievous	light	adhesive	crashing
invisible	faithful	heavy	<i>Weight.</i>	stunning
visible	cunning	oak	great	rattling
<i>Man.</i>	<i>Vegetable.</i>	deal	light	crushing
wise	wholesome	elm	heavy	thundering
good	unwholesome	<i>Dis order.</i>	ponderous	<i>Posture.</i>
clever	poisonous	ash	<i>Form.</i>	standing
noble	hurtful	painful	square	sitting
rich	herbaceous	inflammatory	circular	leaning
industrious	woody	feverish	round	reclining
sober	eatable	dangerous	globular	upright
bad	<i>Mineral.</i>	eruptive	oblong	awkward
proud	useful	internal	spherical	easy
haughty	valuable	external	triangular	<i>Complexion.</i>
ignorant	transparent	<i>Medicine.</i>	oval	pale
poor	poisonous	strengthening	bent	dark
<i>Action.</i>	opaque	purgative	thin	sallow
good	astringent	aromatic	thick	black
bad	<i>Stone.</i>	nauseous	<i>Colour.</i>	fair
noble	porous	acid	white	tawny
mean	pulverable	bitter	black	ruddy
foolish	hard	sweet	red	sickly
dishonest	soft	restorative	green	<i>Instrument.</i>
clever	<i>Marble.</i>	<i>Wine.</i>	blue	sharp
generous	white	red	ye low	blunt
wicked	black	white	brown	keen
<i>Sensation.</i>	red	British	crimson	pointed
agreeable	grained	foreign	<i>Space.</i>	dull
disagreeable	rough	new	large	useful
painful	polished	old	small	<i>Invention.</i>
pleasing	<i>Soil.</i>	<i>Weather.</i>	wide	useful
thrilling	rich	hot	broad	clever
<i>Ruler.</i>	poor	cold	deep	ingenious
wise	barren	dry	shallow	wonderful
good	fertile	wet	empty	<i>Surface.</i>
unjust	sandy	frosty	<i>Taste.</i>	smooth
merciful	gravelly	stormy	bitter	rough
just	clayey	<i>Substance.</i>	sweet	even
tryannical	wet	hard	sour	plane
<i>Subject.</i>	stony	soft	luscious	level
loyal	loamy	pliable	pungent	hollow
poor	<i>Water.</i>	brittle	insipid	concave
mean	dirty	opaque	sapid	convex
rich	hard	transparent	acrid	inclined

GENERAL NAMES WITH ADJECTIVES.

red clay	a laborious occupation	a little fault	bad money
white clay	a careful servant	a great fault	sterling money
a solid rock	a careless servant	a rich country	foreign money
a sand-stone rock	an attentive servant	a fertile country	British money
a flinty rock	an idle servant	a barren country	new money
a heavy metal	an old servant	a desert country	old money
a valuable metal	a faithful servant	a stony country	a gold coin
a soft metal	a dishonest servant	a marshy country	a silver coin
a brittle metal	a skilful labourer	a mountainous country	a copper coin
a mixed metal	a careless labourer	a level country	a long time
a useful metal	a slothful labourer	a woody country	a short time
a trained fruit-tree	a clever mechanic	a waste country	a certain time
a barren fruit-tree	a bungling mechanic	an open country	a happy time
a wild fruit-tree	an attentive teacher	an angular object	a wet season
a productive fruit-tree	a kind teacher	a triangular object	a dry season
a diseased fruit-tree	a negligent teacher	a beautiful object	a cold month
a tender shrub	an obedient pupil	a round object	a wet month
a prickly shrub	a disobedient pupil	an even number	a frosty month
a flowering shrub	an attentive pupil	an odd number	a rainy month
a hardy shrub	a poor clergyman	a great number	a pleasant month
a medicinal shrub	a rich clergyman	a small number	a fine day
a bitter herb	a pious clergyman	a manufacturing county	a warm day
a poisonous herb	a charitable clergyman	an agricultural county	a cold day
a fragrant herb	a benevolent clergyman	a mineral county	a stormy day
an odorous herb	a skilful physician	a grazing county	a pleasant day
a wild beast	a humane physician	a great city	a bright day
a tame beast	an experienced physician	a populous city	a clear day
a savage beast	a young man	an opulent city	a cloudy day
a foreign bird	an aged man	a handsome city	a dark day
a singing bird	a venerable man	an ancient city	a windy day
a carnivorous bird	an awkward posture	a modern city	a rainy day
a granivorous bird	a lazy posture	a commercial city	a healthful game
a beautiful bird	an easy posture	a little city	a useful game
a speckled bird	a generous action	a capital city	a dexterous game
a poisonous reptile	a kind action	a populous town	an easy game
a creeping reptile	a daring action	a manufacturing town	a noisy amusement
a venomous reptile	a bold action	a large town	a dangerous amusement
a harmless reptile	a maimed limb	a seaport town	a frivolous amusement
a large fish	a weak limb	an inland town	a happy event
a small fish	a broken limb	an old town	a sorrowful event
a fine fish	a sound limb	a fine town	a joyful event
a careful insect	a crooked limb	a rich town	good food
an industrious insect	a paralysed limb	a large town	wholesome food
a venomous insect	pleasing features	a pleasant village	bad food
a crawling insect	ordinary features	a beautiful village	vegetable food
a hurtful insect	regular features	a deserted village	animal food
a tall person	a vicious passion	a wide river	cheap food
a short person	a virtuous passion	a navigable river	expensive food
an old person	a malignant disease	a winding river	cheap beverage
a young person	an inflammatory disease	a rapid river	an intoxicating beverage
a useful trade	a contagious disease	a muddy river	a cheering beverage
a mechanical trade	a lingering disease	a great river	a wholesome beverage
a mercantile trade	a fatal disease	a great weight	strong liquid
a profitable trade	a purgative medicine	a small weight	a nourishing liquid
a disagreeable occupation	an aromatic medicine	a light weight	a clear liquid
a dirty trade	a cooling medicine	a capacious measure	a pure liquid
an easy trade	an astringent medicine	a long measure	torn clothing
a pleasant trade	a ruinous vice	a short measure	ragged clothing
an agreeable occupation	a common vice	a full measure	warm clothing
a tiresome occupation	an ungovernable vice	an empty measure	thin clothing
		good money	light clothing

GENERAL NAMES WITH ADJECTIVES.

cheap clothing	a splendid building	an empty vessel	a hurtful root
expensive clothing	a public building	a full vessel	good land
rich clothing	a private building	a wide vessel	barren land
fine clothing	a beautiful building	a shallow vessel	fruitful land
mean clothing	a handsome building	a dangerous weapon	cultivated land
shabby clothing	a mean building	a useful weapon	waste land
an inflammable substance	an ancient building	a murderous weapon	fertile land
an impenetrable substance	a modern building	a defensive weapon	rich land
a pulverable substance	a convenient building	an offensive weapon	a high hill
a mineral substance	a capacious building	a sharp weapon	a distant hill
a vegetable substance	an extensive possession	a striking likeness	a near hill
a damp substance	a landed possession	a good likeness	fresh water
a supple substance	a rich possession	a bad likeness	salt water
a porous substance	a mourning carriage	a flattering likeness	rain water
a small thing	a gilded carriage	an old picture	pump water
a large thing	an open carriage	a modern picture	muddy water
a white thing	a low carriage	a soiled picture	soft water
a strong fabric	a broad road	a dirty picture	clean water
a durable fabric	a narrow road	a ripe berry	spring water
a light fabric	a new road	a green berry	pure water
a near orb	an old road	a wild berry	dirty water
a distant orb	a straight road	a poisonous berry	stagnant water
an immense orb	a crooked road	a wholesome berry	river water
an wise being	a bad road	a sour berry	sea water
a holy being	a good road	a ripe nut	putrid water
a just being	a pleasant road	a green nut	brackish water
an omnipotent being	a sharp instrument	a Spanish nut	fine weather
a merciful being	a blunt instrument	a sound nut	pleasant weather
an almighty being	a pointed instrument	ripe grain	warm weather
a fallen being	a large machine	musty grain	cold weather
a sinful being	a small machine	sprouted grain	frosty weather
a glorious being	a ponderous machine	unripe grain	dry weather
a benevolent being	a powerful machine	a noxious weed	stormy weather
a merciful being	a useful machine	a troublesome weed	delightful weather
a loving creator	a farming utensil	a poisonous weed	a vivid meteor
a wise creator	a kitchen utensil	a sweet root	a brilliant meteor
a spacious building	a cooking utensil	an eatable root	a near place
		a bitter root	an unknown place
a common black mineral			
a common white mineral			
a heavy valuable metal			
a hard brittle metal			
a hardy prickly shrub			
a tender flowering shrub			
a beautiful speckled bird			
a creeping venomous reptile			
a creeping harmless reptile			
a dirty profitable trade			
an easy pleasant trade			
an old honest servant			
a woody mountainous country			
an ancient opulent city			
a sharp useful weapon			
an inflammable mineral substance			
a cheap durable fabric			
a splendid public building			
an old narrow road			
a sound Spanish nut			
	a little city, a large town, and a beautiful village		
	a gold coin, a silver coin, and a copper coin		
	a dark, windy, and rainy day		
	good, wholesome, and cheap food		
	a cheap and wholesome beverage		
	cheap warm clothing, and expensive light clothing		
	a mineral substance, a vegetable substance, and an animal substance		
	a wise benevolent being, and a foolish sinful being		
	a poisonous berry, a sweet root, and a noxious weed		
	a aged man, a young woman, and a playful child		
	a sorrowful event, a joyful event and a fatal event		
	a human law, a divine law and a parental command		

THE DEFINITE ARTICLE.

The definite Article THE is used to specify some particular thing of a kind.

It is used in speaking or writing of an object of eminence, as, The Queen, the Princess Royal, the Government. It is also applied to objects of which only one is commonly spoken of, as, The Sun, The Moon, The Earth, The Sea.

ANIMALS.

lion, fox, elephant, cow, rook, eagle, whale
the lion, the fox, the eagle, the whale.

FLOWERS.

pink, tulip, crocus, polyanthus, wallflower, lupin.
the pink, and tulip, the wallflower and polyanthus.

MEDICINES

jalap, senna, salts, castor-oil, rhubarb, calomel.
the jalap and the rhubarb ; the calomel, not the senna.

GRAIN

barley, oats, rye, wheat, indian-corn, buckwheat.
the wheat, the rye and oats, not the indian corn.

PARTS OF A TREE.

trunk, branch, root, bark, bud, leaves.
the trunk, the root, the leaves. The Tree.

PARTS OF A COAT.

skirt, button, sleeves, button-holes, collar, lining, pockets.
the skirt, the buttons, the sleeves, the collar. The Coat.

TOYS.

a ball, a doll, a hoop, a battledore, a top, a bow, an arrow
the ball, the doll, the battledore, the bow and arrow.

BOOKS.

a thick book, a thin book, an old book, a new book, a red book.
the old book, the thin book, A book, (any one) The books. (all)

FLOWERS.

a white flower, a red flower, a yellow flower, a blue flower.
The white flower, the red and the blue flowers, not the yellow flower ; a flower, (any one) The Flowers. (all).

MANY TREES.

low trees, high trees, spreading trees, evergreen trees, old trees.
The Trees, (all) the high trees, (all the high trees) a high tree, (one of the high trees) an evergreen tree, (one of the evergreen trees) the tall evergreen tree.

FIVE DOGS.

a brown dog, a spotted dog, a black dog, a white dog, a big dog.
the brown dog, the white dog, not the black dog, the brown and white dogs, not the spotted dog, the black and big dogs.

DOGS, HORSES, PENS, CAPS, CANDLES.

the savage dog, the quiet dog ; the big horse, the bay horse, the long pen, the new pen, not the old pen ; the leather cap and the fur cap, not the cloth caps ; the thick short candle, not the thick long candle.

Note. The Definite Article will be resumed after the Verbs have been introduced to the pupils. The nature of the above exercise will be evident to the teacher. It must be taught with objects, or pictures to be understood. It gives a correct idea of the manner in which this word enters into construction in sentences, but not a complete one.

PRONOUNS.

The following exercises on Pronouns are here given in order to enable the teacher and pupils to make use of these words in connection with the lessons that come immediately after them, but the nature and office of Pronouns cannot be fully explained and illustrated by examples, till after the Verbs TO BE and TO HAVE have been introduced to the pupils.

<i>Singular. Plural.</i>		my slate	its tail	my own book
I	We	my frock	its ear	my own cap
Thou	You	my shoes	its egg	my own hand
He	They	my father	its shoe	mine own kite
She	They	my uncle	its nest	mine own apple
It	They	my aunt	its eyes	
<i>First Person.</i>		my clothes	its teeth	thy own money
I	We	my relations	its wings	thy own cane
mine-own	ours	my sisters	its bill	thine own staff
Me	us	my brother	its neck	thine own picture
			its kennel	
<i>Second Person.</i>		thy shilling		his own slate
Thou	ye you	thy father	our school	his own pencil
Thine-own	yours	thy mother	our garden	his own hair
Thee	you	thy gloves	our house	his own jacket
<i>Third Person.</i>		thy staff	our clothes	
He	They	thy hat	our hands	her own tea
His-own	Their	thy vest	our desk	her own comb
Him	Them	thy knife	our form	her own needle
<i>Third Person.</i>		thy watch	our books	her own scissors
		thy slate	our master	her own bag
		thy shoes	our slates	
		thy coat	our shoes	its own eggs
She	They			its own horns
Hers	Theirs	his jacket	your books	its own whip
Her	Them	his pony	your shoes	its own hand
<i>Third Person.</i>		his knife	your keys	its own nest
It	They	his hand	your shirts	
Its-own	Theirs	his book	your jacket	our own feet
It	Them	his cap	your napkin	our own boots
<i>Personal Pronominal Articles.</i>		his sister	your hats	our own clothes
my	our	his napkin	your gloves	our own fingers
thy	your	his shirt	your boots	our own garden
his	their	his ball		
her	their		their desk	your own hats
its	their	her shoes	their tails	your own book
my own	our own	her hair	their ears	your own hand
thy own	your own	her book	their hands	your own pencil
his own	their own	her frock	their shoes	
her own	their own	her apron	their frocks	their own marbles
its own	their own	her aunt	their pens	their own knives
		her brother	their father	their own jacket
		her cousin	their mother	their own stockings

POSSESSION.

Of is sometimes the mark of the possessive case and then like the letter s' (with an apostrophe) it serves to distinguish the thing, to which another thing belongs, whether intrinsically or extrinsically ; as, The crown of the king, The mane of the lion ; otherwise the king's crown, the lion's mane.

John's slate	The Lord's house	His sister's frock
His slate	His house	Her frock
The slate of John	The house of the Lord	The frock of his sister
Robert's knife	Mr—'s shop	Her mother's gown
His knife	His shop	Her gown
The knife of Robert	The shop of Mr—	The gown of her mother
William's book	Mr—'s house	Thy brother's book
His book	His house	His book
The book of William	The house of Mr—	The book of thy brother
Ann's scissors	The master's hat	My grandfather's staff
Her scissors	His hat	His staff
The scissors of Ann	The hat of the master	The staff of my grandfather
Mary's ear rings	The gardener's spade	Our teacher's hat
Her earrings	His spade	His hat
The earrings of Mary	The spade of the gardener	The hat of our teacher
Jane's frock	The shoemaker's awl	The boys' room
Her frock	His awl	Their room
The frock of Jane	The awl of the shoemaker	The room of the boy
James' marbles	A tailor's thimble	The girls' play-ground
His marbles	His thimble	Their play-ground
The marbles of James	The thimble of a tailor	The play-ground of the girls
Thomas' jacket	The farmer's carts	The servant's bed
His jacket	His carts	Her bed
The jacket of Thomas	The carts of the farmer	The bed of the servant
Mr—'s greatcoat	The mason's apron	The carpenter's tools
His greatcoat	His apron	Their tools
The greatcoat of Mr—	The apron of the mason	The tools of the carpenters
Mrs —'s parasol	A surgeon's lancet	The children's toys
Her parasol	His lancet	Their toys
The parasol of Mrs—	The lancet of a surgeon	The toys of the children
God's son	The queen's crown	Men's shoes
His son	Her crown	Their shoes
The son of God	The crown of the queen	The shoes of men
God's spirit	A Jew's beard	A peacock's tail
His spirit	His beard	Its tail
The spirit of God	The beard of a Jew	The tail of the peacock
God's book	My father's house	A stag's horns
His book	His house	Its horns
The book of God	The house of my father	The horns of a stag

POSSESSION (CONTINUED.)

The Possessive case with the letter s & an apostrophe is not made use of in speaking of one inanimate thing belonging to another inanimate thing, thus, instead of the house's roof, write the roof of the house.

The leg of a table	the buttons of the coat	the flesh of a cow
the end of the table	the pocket of the coat	the flesh of a sheep
the corners of the table	the crown of a hat	the flesh of a sow
the top of a desk	the band of the hat	the flesh of a calf
the lid of a box	the lining of the hat	the flesh of a lamb
the inside of the box	the strings of a shoe	the flesh of a deer
the handle of a door	the sole of the shoe	the flesh of a hen
the key of the door	the heel of the shoe	the flesh of a man
the lock of the door	the chain of a watch	the flesh of a horse
the seat of a chair	the key of a watch	the flesh of a goat
the back of the chair	the lid of a pot	the roof of a house
the arms of the chair	the handle of a pot	the floors of the house
the cork of a bottle	the boards of a book	the chimney of the house
the neck of the bottle	the back of a book	the crown of the head
the bottom of the bottle	the leaves of a book	the sides of the head
the wheels of a cart	the pages of the book	the sole of the foot
the sides of a cart	the middle of a book	the calf of the leg
the handle of a knife	the end of the book	the tip of the tongue
the blade of the knife	the roof of the mouth	the edge of a cup
the spring of the knife	the bark of a tree	the bottom of the cup
the masts of a ship	the leaves of the tree	the handle of the cup
the sails of the ship	the steeple of a church	the lid of a teapot
the bow of the ship	the bell of the church	the top of a coach
the keel of the ship	the window of the church	the inside of a coach
the root of a tree	the pulpit of the church	the smell of a flower .
the trunk of the tree	the palm of the hand	a leaf of a tree
the branches of the tree	the sides of the hand	a leaf of a book
the collar of a coat	the back of the hand	the chain of a dog
the cuffs of the coat	the top of a house	the chain of an anchor
the sleeves of the coat	the walls of a house	the top of a coach

Either the preposition of or a hyphen may be used with the following words as the key of the door, the door-key.

a watch-key	the kitchen-door	a bed-cover	a chair-bottom
a watch-chain	the kitchen-table	a table-cover	a corn-field
a watch-case	the door-bell	a table-drawer	a hay-stack
the door-latch	the parlour-bell	the door-handle	a corn-stack
the parlour-window	the church-bell	the door-key	sea-water
the chimney-top	the garden-wall	the lobby-lamp	river-water
the kitchen-door	the garden-walk	the parlour-chairs	spring-water
the cupboard-door	the garden-gate	a pot-lid	a hay-band
the church-door	a coach-wheel	a window-blind	a flower-root
the cellar-door	a cart wheel	a window-curtain	a door-lock
the stable-door	a sofa cover	a bed-curtain	a drawer-lock

POSSESSION (CONTINUED.)

OF is often used merely to mark the relation there is between a thing of a certain form or manufacture and materials and another thing of which it is partly or wholly composed as, a field of wheat, or of barley ; likewise between a place and some circumstance that has occurred in it ; as, a field of battle.

a cup of tea	a sheet of paper	a pair of gloves
a cup of coffee	a pane of glass	a pair of trousers
a jug of milk	a drop of ink	a pair of scissors
a jug of water	a crumb of bread	a spoonful of milk
a tumbler of ale	a crust of bread	a drove of oxen
a glass of whiskey	a bunch of flowers	a flock of sheep
a glass of wine	a sack of flour	a flock of birds
a loaf of bread	a bag of potatoes	an army of soldiers
a slice of bread	a lump of clay	a shower of rain
a slice of ham	a lump of dough	a flash of lightning
a piece of chalk	a skein of thread	a peal of thunder
a piece of cheese	a skein of worsted	a gush of wind
a piece of beef	a bundle of sticks	a row of houses
a bottle of beer	a bundle of rags	a dozen of apples
a bottle of whiskey	a parcel of books	a score of sheep
a bottle of oil	a stick of sealingwax	a field of barley
a bottle of ink	a string of beads	a pound of sugar
a tub of water	a handful of meal	an ounce of tea
a pail of water	a load of coals	a pint of milk
a pitcher of milk	a barrowful of earth	a pocketful of berries
a plate of soup	a box of pills	a row of trees
a barrel of herrings	a bunch of grapes	an ear of corn
a basket of clothes	a suit of clothes	a blade of grass

Nouns denoting qualities, &c., become adjectives by being placed before other Nouns as pen-knife.

a table-knife	an oil-bottle	a drum-stick	a door-mat
a breakfast-knife	a bed-steed	a hat-box	cannon-balls
a tea-spoon	a pencil-case	a pen-box	a horse-shoe
a table-spoon	a basin-stand	an arm-chair	a silver-spoon
an egg-spoon	a hat-stand	a hearth-stone	an ink-stand
sugar-tongs	a clothes-brush	a coffee-mill	a steel-pen
a sugar bowl	a shoe-brush	a water-mill	a chimney-pot
a tea-cup	a hat-brush	a door-lock	a window-shutter
a tea-kettle	a breast-pin	a coat-pocket	a stage-coach
a tea-pot	a side-board	a feather-bed	a mail-coach
a coffee-pot	a shoe-horn	a hair-mattress	a hay-cart
a milk-pot	a boot-jack	a straw-mattress	a canal-boat
a flower-pot	a tooth-pick	a country-house	a coal-axe
a cork-screw	a hand-saw	a town-house	a bottle-axe
a wine-glass	a powder-horn	a dining-room	shell-fish
an ale-glass	a watch-dog	a silver-watch	skim-milk
a soup-ladle	a lap-dog	a gold-watch	soda-water
a soup-plate	a cart-horse	a brass-button	ginger-beer
a breakfast-plate	a coach-horse	a silk-button	table-beer
an ink-bottle	a fiddle-stick	a linen-shirt	a pitch-fork

TO HAVE. (*To possess.*)

PRESENT TIME.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

*Affirmatively.**Negatively.**Affirmatively.**Negatively.*

I have a watch I have not a coach
 Thou hast a slate Thou hast not a razor
 He has a hat He has not a bonnet
 She has a bonnet She has not a hat
 It has a tail It has not hands

We have clothes We have not horns
 You have shoes You have not boots
 They have marbles They have not dolls
 They have pins They have not hats
 They have horns They have not arms

I have a shilling
 I have a knife
 I have a bible
 I have a ball
 I have a slate
 I have a pencil-case
 I have two feet
 I have eight fingers
 I have a new hat
 I have a pretty book
 I have no marbles
 I have some apples
 I have flesh
 I have a soul
 I have a heart
 I have a mind
 You have a staff
 You have a watch
 You have a gun
 You have a pen-knife
 You have a penny
 You have a sore finger
 You have a red face
 You have new shoes
 You have a red book
 We have white trousers
 You have no apples
 You have ten toes
 You have two thumbs
 The master has a desk
 a gardener has a spade
 a farmer has a plough
 a carpenter has a saw
 a cook has an apron
 a reaper has a sickle
 a mower has a scythe
 a fisherman has a boat
 a surgeon has a lancet
 a soldier has a gun
 a mason has a mallet
 a tailor has a needle
 a dog has four legs
 a pony has short ears
 a bull has two horns
 a cow has four teats

a fish has scales
 a house has no eyes
 a house has windows
 a house has doors
 a house has a roof
 a man has a beard
 a negro has black skin
 a man has two legs
 a swan has a long neck
 a bird has two legs
 a butterfly has four wings
 a bird has two wings
 a man has no wings
 a bird has a bill
 a man has a nose
 a fly has six legs
 a fish has a tail
 a monkey has a long tail
 a coat has two tails
 a table has no tail
 a table has four legs
 a lion has four strong legs
 a man has two eyes
 a fish has two eyes
 a negress has black skin
 a lioness has no mane
 a ship has three masts
 a cat has long whiskers
 the dog has a kennel
 the dog has hair
 the sow has six pigs
 the children have slates
 the boys have caps
 the girls have bonnets
 the people have houses
 an ass has one head, two
 long ears, four legs and
 a short tail
 a boy has one head, two
 eyes, two arms and two
 legs
 birds and beasts have legs
 birds and insects have wings
 birds and fishes have tails
 men and beasts have heads

churches have large windows
 bridges have no windows
 soldiers have red coats
 a house has many parts
 a man has many qualities
 a city has many streets
 a village has few streets
 a week has seven days
 he has four pretty books
 Mary has blue eyes
 she has a white frock
 she has two ear-rings
 she has ten pens
 the monkey has a long tail
 it has sharp teeth
 it has an ugly face
 it has no wings
 it has no fins
 John has one sister
 he has no brother
 he has an uncle
 he has no aunt
 Catherine has twelve books
 she has no money
 she has a box
 James and I have gloves
 we have pens
 we have shoes
 You and I have no horns
 we have no money
 we have a black dog
 they and we have bibles
 they and we have cold hands
 horses have no wings
 they have legs
 they have ears and eyes
 Robert and Mary have slates
 they have pencil-cases
 they have no guns
 John's father has a horse
 his father has a horse
 Mary's mother has a house
 her mother has a house
 Peter's brother has a fiddle
 his brother has a fiddle

TO HAVE. (*To possess*) (*CONTINUED.*)

PRESENT TIME.

Ann's sister has a doll	I have my own hat	The servant has a teapot
her sister has a doll	Peter has his own ass	She has a bedcover
trees and books have leaves	they have their own spoon	His father has a country house
they have no fingers	my hat has a broad brim	I have an arm-chair
a square table has four corners	Robert and John have fathers	He has a silver watch
I have a cold	your desk has six legs	The lady has a gold watch
You have tooth-ache	their slates have no frames	They have brass buttons
I have William's gloves	two horses have eight legs	You have linen shirts
we have God's book	three birds have six wings	The lady has a lap-dog
we have the book of God	two boys have four arms	thy boot has a thick sole
you have the master's knife	a boy has twenty nails	his father has six children
I have a soldier's gun	I have the jaw of a shark	her mother has two cows
John has my knife	he has the key of my watch	our master has many pupils
Ann has thy slate	James has the leaf of a book	our dog has a long tail
Mary has a top	Ann has the key of the door	they have brothers and sisters
I have your books	John has a bottle of ink	they have mothers
you have your pen	A miller has sacks of flour	our school has eight windows

You have a watch, and I have a knife.	He has two marbles, but I have twenty marbles.
You have a black coat, and James has a blue jacket.	A bird has two wings, and a cow has two horns.
I have two feet, and a cow has four feet.	A bird has two legs, but a horse has four legs.
A bird has wings, but a horse has no wings.	An ass has long ears, but an ass has no horns.
A painter has a brush, and a carpenter has a plane.	A negro has a black skin, but I have a white skin.
An ass has long ears, and a horse has short ears.	A soldier has a red coat, but the master has a black coat.
Mary has a blue frock, and Ann has a black frock.	A monkey has a long tail, but an ape has no tail.
Robert has a slate, and William has a ball.	I have no brothers but I have six sisters.
He has a shilling, and I have a penny.	Our dog has long ears, but our dog has not a long tail.
My father has a dog, and his father has a horse.	James has a slate, but he has no pencil-case.
Robert's brother has white trousers, and his sister has a white frock.	I have a shilling, but I have not a sovereign.
George has a new slate but no pencil.	You have noses and ears, but not horns.
William has a ruled book, but not an ink-stand.	

A horse has a head mane, body tail, legs, hoofs, fetlocks, knees...

A house has corners, floors, walls, ceilings, doors, windows...

A coat has a collar, back, tails, sleeves, cuffs, buttons, lappels, lining...

A ship has a deck, hull, helm, anchor, sails, masts, rigging, boats...

A bird has a body, wings, a tail, feathers, a bill, legs, claws...

An apple has a stalk, peel, a core, pippins or seeds, juice...

A day has the morning, forenoon, afternoon, evening, night...

A day has twenty four hours, an hour has sixty minutes, a minute has sixty seconds...

A year has four seasons, twelve months, thirteen moons, fifty two weeks, three hundred and sixty five days...

A church has doors windows, aisles, pews, a tower, a belfry, bells, a roof...

An insect has a head, body, thorax, feelers, legs, claws...

Ducks have soft feathers, a roundish bill, short legs, and webbed feet...

Butterflies have moveable heads, soft bodies, clubbed antennæ, and downy wings...

Horses have arched necks, strong bones, horny hoofs, and long tails...

A negro has curly hair, a black skin, wide nostrils, and projecting lips...

TO HAVE.

PAST TIME.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

*Affirmatively.**Negatively.**Affirmatively.**Negatively.*

I had a cap —. I had not a gun —. We had rabbits —. We had not slates —.
 Thou hadst an apple —. Thou hadst not an ass —. You had money —. You had not a teacher —.
 He had a kite —. He had not a rabbit —. They had marbles —. They had not pens —.
 She had a doll —. She had not a parasol —. They had combs —. They had not scissors —.
 It had no horns —. It had not claws —. They had no hoofs —. They had not a father —.

John had a blue jacket last year.

Mary had a brown kitten two years ago.

Alexander had a robin last Winter.

Mary had mittens yesterday.

A boy had a pigeon some months ago.

A boy had a sparrow last Spring.

Ann had a large apple last Tuesday.

Jane had red shoes some years ago.

She had a white frock last May.

She had a straw bonnet two years ago.

She had an umbrella last Winter.

John had five pence last Christmas.

He had a long string last August.

He had a small kite last August.

He had a large knife some months ago.

Mary had short hair a year ago.

She had no earrings seven years ago.

A mare had a foal last Spring.

A sow had twelve pigs last Summer.

You had a sore finger last Winter.

The Jews had a temple many years ago. Jacob had many cattle.

She had a headache yesterday.

She had a father & mother a few years ago.

You had no sisters last year.

He had two brothers a few months since.

I had three uncles some years ago.

I had two aunts, but they are dead.

An old man had a sow last Autumn.

A poor woman had a cow last Spring.

My father had eight children once.

He had a large house.

Thy mother had a baby last year.

She had two servants a year ago.

His brother had a sore foot a month ago.

Her uncle had a long nose.

Our master had a sore throat last Winter.

Their slates had frames last year.

Adam had a wife.

Eve had sons and daughters.

Moses had a rod.

David had a harp.

She had a sore finger last Winter, and he had a sore foot last Summer.

John had sixpence last week, and William had a shilling last week.

Her father had eight children, and my father had six children.

The cat had four kittens a week ago, and the dog had puppies two months ago.

QUESTIONS ON THE PRESENT AND PAST TIME.

Have you a slate? Have you a book? Have you a penny? Have you a horse? Have you a saw? Have you boots? Have you wings? Have you a tail? Have you marbles?

Have you a blue jacket? Have you a little kitten? Have you a large apple? Have you a white frock? Have you a long knife? Have you a long string?

Have I a watch? Have you a white hat? Have you a short coat? Have you a long foot? Have you a wife? Have you a daughter? Have you children? Have you a father? Have you a cold? Have you tooth-ache?

Had you a hat? Had you a white hat —? Had you a shilling —? Had you a dog —? Had you a monkey —?

Had I a horse —? Had I a cold —? Had I a tooth-ache —? Had I a little dog —? Had I a white hat —? Had I a gun —? Had I a little hand —? Had I a short foot —?

Has a soldier a gun? Has he a sword? Has he a red coat? Has he white trousers?

Has a farmer a plough? Has he a ship? Has he a spade? Has he servants?

Has Charles books? Has he new clothes? Has he a kite? Has he a staff?

TO HAVE.

QUESTIONS ON THE PRESENT AND PAST TIME (*CONTINUED*)

Had Charles a wig — ? Had he an apple — ? Had he a long foot — ?
Had he a red face — ?

Has Mary a white frock ? Had she a long neck — ? Had she a straw
bonnet — ? Has she a kind father — ? Had she red shoes — ?

Had Mary red shoes — Had she blue stockings — ? Had she much
money — ? Had she a little sister — ? Had she a little bag — ?

Has a monkey a tail ? Has it a long tail ? Has it wings ? Has it
fins ?

Has a house windows ? Has it a door ? Has it a roof ? Has it eyes ?
Has it legs ?

Has a desk legs ? Has it a head ? Has it a back ?

Has a worm legs ? Has it wings ? Has it a tail ? Has it a head ?

Has an ass ears ? Has it money ?

Has a horse arms ? Has it wings ?

Have children arms ? Have they eyes ? Have they hoofs ? Have
they wings ?

Have men noses ? Have they heads ? Have they money ?

Have children long ears ? Have they little feet ? Have they cradles ?

Have they parents ?

INTERROGATIVES.

(*Who, What, Which, How.*)

Who has a red face ? Who has a long nose ? Who has thick shoes ?
Who has red hair ? Who has a large head ? Who has a sore finger ?
Who has many books ? Who has no horns ? Who has no money ?
Who has no hat ?

Who had a white hat — ? Who had a great coat — ? Who had a
little dog — ? Who had a large apple — ? Who had many pounds — ?

Who had parents — ? Who had a harp — ? Who had three sons — ?

Who have red hair ? Who have frocks ? Who have jackets ? Who
have bats ? Who have red coats ? Who have spades ? Who have
ploughs ? Who have spades & hammers ? Who have brooms ? Who
have black faces ? Who have black skins ?

What has a horse ? What has a tree ? What have desks ? What
has a ship ? What has a book ?

What have books ? What have trees ? What have desks ? What
have elephants ?

What have you ? What have I ? What has he ? What have they ?

What has Robert ? What has the master ? What has the king ?
What has a carter ? What has a gardener ? What has James ?
What has a cat ? What has a mare ? What has a cow ?

INTERROGATIVES. (*CONTINUED.*)

What thing has hinges? What place has a fire? What room has a fire? What book has many leaves? What carriage has four wheels? What carriage has two wheels? What liquid has a red colour? What vessel has a rudder? What animal has a long head? What beast has sharp teeth? What quadruped has thick legs? What bird has long legs? What reptile has a low back? What insect has a sting? What flower has red blossoms? What tree has long boughs? What metal has a yellow colour? What building has a steeple? What building has arches? What person has a son?

What animals have long necks? What beasts have long tails? What buildings have no windows? What men have red coats?

Which teacher has a black coat? Which scholar has red hair? Which servant has earrings? Which pupils have many books? Which chair has a soft seat? Which pupil has no parents?

How many legs has a dog? How many legs has a cat? How many legs has a bird? How many legs has a man? How many legs has a boy?

How many ears have two boys? How many ears have three men? How many ears has the table?

How many arms has a boy? How many arms has a girl? How many arms has a tree?

How many toes has he? How many toes has she?

How many eyes have I? How many eyes have you? How many eyes have two boys and a girl? How many eyes have three bulls and a cow?

How many pence had you — ? How many pence had she — ? How many pence had they — ?

TO BE. (*TO EXIST.*)

PRESENT TIME.

SINGULAR.		PLURAL.	
<i>Affirmatively.</i>	<i>Negatively.</i>	<i>Affirmatively.</i>	<i>Negatively.</i>
Thou art weak	Thou art not strong	We are well	We are not deaf
I am strong	I am not weak	You are young	You are not old
He is fat	He is not thin	They are idle	They are busy
She is thin	She is not fat	They are busy	They are not idle
It is long	It is not short	They are hard	They are not soft
I am a man	I am not a child	We are teachers	We are not pupils
Thou art a boy	Thou art not a man	You are pupils	You are not teacher
He is a man	He is not a boy	They are boys	They are not girls
She is a girl	She is not a woman	They are girls	They are not boys
It is a fly	It is not a bee	They are desks	They are not teachers

TO BE. PRESENT TIME. (CONTINUED.)

I am big	We are honest	Thou art not big
I am happy	We are not little	Thou art not rich
I am weak	We are not old	Thou art not learned
I am kind	We are not idle	Thou art not old
I am busy	We are not sick	Thou art not busy
I am sober	We are not dead	Thou art not lame
I am well	We are not lame	Thou art not glad
I am honest	We are not tired	John is little
I am glad	You are warm	he is little
I am clothed	You are well	he is poor
I am not little	You are deaf	he is happy
I am not rich	You are awake	he is deaf
I am not stupid	You are rich	he is dumb
I am not ignorant	You are clad	he is young
I am not asleep	You are ignorant	he is honest
I am not deaf	You are not cold	he is not big
I am not dumb	You are not blind	he is not rich
I am not blind	You are not drunk	he is not blind
I am not idle	You are not sulky	he is not asleep
I am not sick	You are not weary	he is not lame
I am not lame	You are not naked	Mary is industrious
I am not proud	You are not learned	she is industrious
I am not naked	Thou art lazy	she is pleased
I am not sulky	Thou art clothed	she is present
We are big	Thou art pale	she is clothed
We are young	Thou art alive	she is not idle
We are busy	Thou art careless	she is not sulky
We are well	Thou art young	she is not absent
We are alive	Thou art deaf	she is not naked

Coal is hard
it is hard
it is black

it is not light
Snow is white
it is white
it is light
it is cold
it is soft
it is not black
it is not heavy
it is not warm
it is not hard

Gold is yellow
it is yellow
it is hard
it is fine
it is smooth
it is heavy
it is not blue
it is not soft
it is not white
it is not coarse
it is not rough
Sugar is brown
it is brown
it is soft
it is nice
it is sweet

Sugar is dear
it is not yellow
it is not hard
it is not bad
it is not sour
it is not cheap
Hay is dry
it is brown
it is light
it is not black
it is not heavy
Grass is green
it is soft
it is moist
it is pointed
it is not red

TO BE. PRESENT TIME. (CONTINUED.)

James and John are strong	Coal is hard and black	Thy slate is clean
they are strong	Snow is white and cold	Thy handkerchief is dirty
they are deaf	Gold is yellow and hard	Thy clothes are new
they are present	Vinegar is sour and cold	Thy cheeks are fat
they are polite	Eggs are white and hard	Thy slate is not dirty
they are honest	Leather is tough and useful	Thy hands are not dirty
they are not weak	Chalk is white and hard	Thy shoes are not clean
they are not lame	Sugar is useful and sweet	His legs are long
they are not vulgar	Stone is hard and heavy	His body is thin
Ann and Mary are kind	Glass is smooth and hard	His nails are dirty
they are kind	Sponge is soft and tough	His hair is short
they are good	A poker is hard and long	His coat is torn
they are industrious	An elephant is large and strong	His knife is new
they are young	A marble is round and hard	Her knife is broken
they are little	A horn is hard and curved	Her hair is neat
they are not unkind	The Lord is holy and righteous	Her frock is mended
they are not bad	We are unholy and wicked	Her cheeks are red
they are not lazy	God is good and kind	Her eyes are grey
they are not old	We are bad and unkind	Her gloves are old
they are not big	Hedges are low and long	Its ears are long
Ann and James are clever	Ropes are strong & tough	Its legs are slender
they are clever	Feathers are light and soft	Its bill is round
they are happy	Knives are sharp and hard	Its claws are sharp
they are busy	Dice are square and hard	Its fur is soft
they are sober	Milk and snow are white	Its eyes are red
they are not drunk	Iron and gold are heavy	Its wings are fragile
they are not stupid	Clay and butter are soft	Its branches are crooked
they are not idle	Silver and gold are heavy	Its branches are bare
Coal and iron are black	Honey and sugar are sweet	Its bark is rough
they are black	Cork and feathers are light	Its surface is smooth
they are heavy	Coal and iron are black & heavy	Its waves are foamy
they are hard		Our desk is long
they are cheap	My father is dead	Our master is well
they are not dear	My mother is alive	Our school is large
they are not soft	My sister is ill	Our garden is pretty
they are not light	My brother is well	Our slates are clean
they are not white	My coat is black	Our pencils are sharp
Marbles are round	My hair is white	Our desk is not short
they are round	My eyes are blue	Our master is not ill
they are small	My hands are clean	Our school is not small
they are light	My clothes are black	Our garden is not ugly
they are strong	My books are new	Our slates are not dirty
they are cheap	My father is not alive	Our pencils are not blunt
they are not large	My mother is not dead	Your friends are alive
they are not square	My sister is not well	Your slates are full
they are not heavy	My brother is not sick	Your pencils are sharp
they are not hot	My coat is not red	Your fingers are straight
	My foot is not short	Your arms are jointed
	My hair is not black	Your ribs are crooked
	My eyes are not red	Your heads are globular
		Your pinafores are soiled
		Your shoes are patched
		Your jaws are moveable

TO BE. PRESENT TIME. (CONTINUED.)

John's slate is dirty.
 His slate is dirty.
 The slate of John is dirty.
 John's slate is not dirty.
 His slate is not dirty.
 The slate of John is not dirty.
 Ann's scissors are new.
 Her scissors are new.
 The scissors of Ann are new.
 Ann's scissors are not old.
 Her scissors are not old.
 The scissors of Ann are not old.
 The boys' room is dirty.
 Their room is dirty.
 The room of the boys is dirty.
 The girls' room is not dirty.
 Their room is not dirty.
 The room of the girls is not dirty.
 The top of the desks is black.
 The key of the door is large.
 The arms of the chair are not straight.
 The cuffs of his coat are dirty.
 The key of the desk is small.
 The floor of the house is high.
 The roof of the school is not dirty.
 The masts of a ship are long.
 The palm of my hand is dirty.
 The back of my hand is clean.
 A tub of cold water is heavy.
 An ear of barley is awned.
 A blade of grass is pointed.
 A stalk of corn is hollow.
 The fur of the beaver is smooth.
 The ears of the ass are pointed.
 The legs and neck of the camelopard
 are long.
 The horns of the cow are curved.
 The bill of the eagle is sharp.
 The tongue of the panther is rough.
 The down of the goose is soft and warm.
 The feathers of the magpie are black
 and white.
 The claws of the lion are curved and
 pointed.
 A crumb of bread is small.
 A coach wheel is round.
 The school windows are clean.
 The kitchen floor is hard.
 The kitchen floor is large.
 The door mat is rough.
 The garden walks are long.

I am hungry *and* she is cold.
 She is blind *and* we are deaf.
 Thou art lazy *and* he is careless.
 Snow is soft *and* ivory is hard.
 Brass is yellow *and* chalk is white.
 James is sick *and* Robert is lame.
 A crow is black *and* a canary is yellow.
 An ostrich is big *and* a wren is little.
 The handle of a mug is crooked, *and* the
 handle of a warming pan is straight.
 The feet of a cat are soft, *and* the hoofs of
 a horse are hard.
 Water is transparent, *and* milk is opaque.
 You are thirsty *and* he is hungry.
 My hair is white *and* my eyes are blue.
 Our school is large *and* our desks are long.
 John's slate is dirty *and* Robert's slate is
 broken.
 The carpenter's saw is sharp *and* the black-
 smith's hammer is heavy.
 The legs of the table are round *and* the legs
 of the desks are square.
 The school-floor is dirty *and* the school-
 windows are clean.
 The elephant is big the horse is handsome
and the tiger is cruel.
 I am weak *but* you are strong.
 I am deaf and dumb *but* I am not blind.
 You are tall *but* we are little,
 They are idle *but* we are busy.
 James and John are big *but* Mary and
 Ann are little.
 Green gooseberries are sour, *but* ripe goose-
 berries are sweet.
 Hay is dry and brown, *but* grass is moist
 and green.
 Treacle is thick and brown, *but* water is
 thin and clear.
 Coal and iron are black *but* snow and milk
 are white.
 Honey and sugar are sweet *but* vinegar
 and lemon are sour.
 The Lord is holy and righteous *but* we are
 unholy and wicked.
 My father is dead *but* my mother is alive.
 My brother is well *but* my sister is ill.
 My trousers are new *but* my coat is old.
 Thy slate is clean *but* his slate is dirty.
 Our desk is long *but* their desk is short.
 The boys' room is dirty *but* the girls' room
 is clean.

TO BE. (*Attribute a Noun*)

I am a teacher.	It is a brute.	A dictionary is a book.
I am not a shoemaker.	A cat is a beast.	A church is a building.
Thou art a scholar.	It is a quadruped.	A house is a building.
Thou art not a tailor.	A crow is a bird.	A bridge is a place.
James is a tailor.	It is not a beast.	London is a place.
He is not a teacher.	A hen is a bird.	Heaven is a place.
Jane is a servant.	It is a fowl.	Hell is a place.
She is not a mistress.	A frog is a reptile.	A day is time.
Jane is the housemaid.	A crocodile is a reptile.	A year is time.
Mary is the cook.	A herring is a fish.	A week is time.
She is not the laundry maid.	It is not a beast.	A robber is a man.
Mrs — is the matron.	A leech is a worm.	Mr— is a man.
She is not a servant.	A snail is a worm.	A wing is a part of a bird.
Dr — is a physician.	A carrot is a root.	A fin is a part of a fish.
He is not a minister.	A potato is a root.	It is not a part of a bird.
John — is a tailor.	It is not a flower.	A floor is a part of a room.
He is not a weaver.	An elm is a tree.	A branch is part of a tree.
Mr W— is a painter.	An oak is a tree.	Stealing is an action.
He — is not a printer.	A rose bush is a shrub.	Running is an action.
The nose is a part of the body.	It is not a tree.	Reading and writing are actions.
A coat is a part of dress.	Sweet-brier is a shrub.	London is a city.
A table is a part of furniture.	Balm is an herb.	Edinburgh is a city.
It is not a part of dress.	Mint is an herb.	Bristol is a city.
A hammer is a tool.	A tulip is a flower.	Liverpool and Birmingham are towns.
A lancet is an instrument.	It is not a tree.	— is a village.
A sword is a weapon.	A lion is a quadruped.	It is not a town.
A plough is an implement.	Thyme is an herb.	—and—are villages.
It is not a weapon.	A lily is a flower.	England is a country.
Bread is food.	Wheat is a grain.	France is a country.
Porridge is food.	Oats and barley are grain.	It is not a city.
Milk is drink.	Gold is a metal.	The Sabbath is a day.
It is liquor.	Iron is a metal.	March is a month.
Jelly is a preserve.	Iron and lead are metals.	May is a month.
Cinnamon is a spice.	Granite is a stone.	It is not a day.
Man is an animal.	It is not a metal.	Spring is a season.
Beasts are animals.	Clay is an earth.	Summer is a season.
Birds and insects are animals.	Chalk is an earth.	It is not a month.
Fishes and worms are animals.	Chalk & clay are earths.	A father is a relation.
A dog is an animal.	Soda is a salt.	A sister is a relation.
A crow is an animal.	Pot-ash is a salt.	An uncle is a relation.
A haddock is an animal.	It is not an earth.	A hill is land.
A bee is an animal.	Shoemaking is a trade.	A country is land.
Trees are vegetables.	Engraving is a trade.	A cape is land.
Shrubs are vegetables.	A coach is a carriage.	It is not water.
Herbs are vegetables.	A gig is a carriage.	A sea is water.
Roots are vegetables.	A ship is a vessel.	A river is water.
Cabbages are vegetables.	It is not a carriage.	It is not land.
Earths are minerals.	A boat is a vessel.	Ice is a state of water.
Stones are minerals.	A cup is a vessel.	U is a letter.
Salts are minerals.	Senna is a medicine.	M D P are letters.
Coal is a mineral.	A pill is a medicine.	U is a vowel.
An apple is a fruit.	Fever is a disease.	R is a consonant.
A plum is a fruit.	Measles is a disease.	
A cow is a beast.	The Bible is a book.	

TO BE. (*Noun-Attribute qualified.*)

I am a tall man.
Thou art a little girl.
He is a good boy.
She is a pretty girl.
It is a white thing.

We are young men.
You are deaf children.
They are big boys.
They are busy boys.
They are large things.

A chisel is a sharp tool.
A plough is a long implement.
Whiskey is a strong drink.
An orange is a yellow fruit.
A fig is a soft fruit.
Jelly is a nice preserve.
A sheep is an useful animal.
It is an innocent animal.
A zebra is a pretty animal.
A tiger is a cruel animal.
A hyæna is a cruel animal.
A tiger and hyæna are cruel animals.
A sow is an useful animal.
The cow and sheep are useful animals.
The elephant is a large animal.
The whale is a large animal.
The elephant and whale are large animals.
A mouse is a small animal.
A frog is a small animal.
A frog and mouse are small animals.
A potatoe is an useful root.
A carrot is a red vegetable.
Iron is a hard mineral.
Silver is a white mineral.
Gold is a yellow mineral.
Coal is a black mineral.
A horse is an useful beast.
A sow is a dirty beast.
• A lion is a wild beast.
A sheep is a tame quadruped.
A goat is a wild quadruped.
Cows and horses are useful quadrupeds.
A crocodile is a large reptile.
Robins and sparrows are small birds.
A toad is a small reptile.
A butterfly is a pretty insect.
A scorpion is an ugly insect.
A bee is an useful insect.
A wasp is an useless insect.
Iron is a hard metal.
Gold is a yellow metal.
Lead is a soft metal.
Granite is a hard stone.
Marble is a pretty stone.
A church is a large building.
A bridge is a large building.
John is a kind person.

A pin is a sharp thing.
A needle is a sharp thing.
A pea is a small thing.
A crown is a pretty thing.
Coal is a black thing.
An anchor is a heavy thing.
A shilling is a round thing.
School is a good place.
Hell is a bad place.
The cellar is a cold place.
The grave is a cold place.
A criminal is a bad man.
Tailoring is an useful trade.
Engraving is a good trade.
Mr. — is a good teacher.
He is not a cruel teacher.
John is a careless scholar.
He is not a diligent scholar.
Mary and James are good scholars.
Ann is an active servant.
She is not a lazy servant.
Jane is a good cook.
She is not a dirty cook.
Robert is a good workman.
He is not a bad workman.
Mr. — is an industrious farmer.
He is not a lazy farmer.
William is a poor weaver.
Alexander is a good shoemaker.
He is not a drunken shoemaker.
The Bible is a good book.
It is a good book.
The dictionary is a large book.
It is a heavy book.
Water is a clear liquid.
Milk is a white liquid.
A ship is a large vessel.
A cup is a small vessel.
London is a large city.
It is a fine city.
— is a pretty village.
— is a dirty village.
— is a clean town.
— is a fine town.
O is round letter.
I is a straight letter.
S is a crooked letter.

TO BE. PAST TIME.

I was cold—.
 I was tired—.
 Thou wast little—.
 He was idle—.
 She was busy—.
 We were happy—.
 You were sick—.
 I was not drunk—.
 He was not idle—.
 They were not busy—.
 John was hungry—.
 James was tired—.
 Mary was diligent—.
 She was not lazy—.
 Janet was ignorant—.
 Adam was good—.
 Cain was not good—.
 Samson was strong—.
 Solomon was wise—.
 Martha was kind—.
 Job was patient—.
 The floor was clean—.
 The window was broken—.
 The poker was hot—.
 It was red—.
 The fire was large—.
 It was warm—.
 My throat was sore—.
 My penknife was sharp—.
 Your hands were dirty—.
 Mary's hair was long—.
 Her cheeks were red—.
 John's finger was sore—.
 His father was tipsy—.
 His face was not black—.
 Robert's knife was pretty—.
 His knife was dear—.
 Mary and Ann were busy—,
 they were good.
 The windows of the school
 were dirty—.
 The kitchen fire was hot—.
 Cain's children were bad—.
 Seth's children were good.
 The arm of the chair was
 broken—.
 The tops of the desks were
 clean—
 I was hungry, and she was
 thirsty—.
 Thou wast lazy, and he was
 careless—.
 John's clothes were torn, and
 his face was dirty—.
 They were idle, but we were
 busy—.
 Ann was happy, but Jane was
 unhappy—.

We were little boys—.
 I was not a man—.
 She was not a boy—.
 It was not a stone—.
 Christ was a babe—.
 John was a weaver—.
 He was a tailor—.
 Her father was a carpenter—.
 His father was a shoemaker—.
 Mary's father was a mason—.
 Her brother was a baker—.
 John's mother was a fat wo-
 man—.
 My father was a good man—.
 Catherine was a servant—.
 She was not a shoemaker—.
 Goliath was a giant.
 David was a shepherd.
 David was a king.
 Solomon was a good king.
 Ahab was a wicked king.
 Abel was a righteous man.
 Abraham was obedient.
 Solomon was a wise man.
 Samson was a strong man.
 Elijah was a good man.
 Moses was a meek man,
 Cain was a wicked man.
 Job was a patient man.
 Eve was Adam's wife.
 Cain and Abel were Adam's
 sons.
 Adam was Cain and Abel's fa-
 ther.
 Eve was their mother.
 Sarah was Abraham's wife.
 Sarah was the wife of Abra-
 ham.
 Abraham was Sarah's husband.
 Abraham was the husband of
 Sarah.
 Isaac was Abraham's son.
 Isaac was the son of Abraham.
 Isaac was Jacob's father.
 Isaac was the father of Jacob.
 Jacob was Joseph's father.
 Jacob was the father of twelve
 sons.
 Solomon was a son of David.
 Jesse was the father of David.
 Mary was Christ's mother.
 Moses was the leader of the
 Israelites.
 Saul was the first king of Is-
 rael.
 Reuben was the eldest son
 of Jacob.

A horse was a foal.
 A horse was not a calf.
 A cow was a calf.
 It was not a foal.
 A cat was a kitten.
 A dog was a puppy.
 A goat was a kid,
 It was not a lamb.
 A bird was an egg.
 A crocodile was an egg.
 A butterfly was a caterpillar
 A caterpillar was an egg.
 Paper was rags.
 Meal was corn.
 A hen was a chicken, and a
 sheep was a lamb.
 The beggar's clothes were
 ragged, and his hair was
 grey.
 The apple was a bud.
 Iron was ore.
 The carpet was wool.
 The mug was clay.
 Parchment was skin.
 Leather was hide.
 The hay was green, it is
 dry.
 The mornings were dark,
 they are light.
 The nights were light,
 they are dark.
 The leaves were buds.
 The flowers were buds.
 The cinders were coal.
 The trees are leafy, they
 were bare.
 The fieldfares were here—.
 The swallows were here—.
 The cuckoo was here—
 The gooseberries were
 ripe—.
 His coat was wool.
 His shirt was cotton.
 It was cotton thread.
 His shirt was flax.
 It was linen thread.
 Mortar was lime and sand.
 Bricks were clay.
 They are hard.
 They were soft.
 Ice was water.
 Steam was water,
 Hay was grass.
 Candles were fat.
 Our stockings were worst-
 ed.
 Brass was zinc and copper.
 Oak trees were saplings.

TO BE.

QUESTIONS ON THE PRESENT AND PAST TIME.

Am I tall ? Am I old ? Am I young ? Am I fat ? Am I lean ? Am I angry ?
Am I drunk ? Am I blind ? Am I deaf ? Am I sick ?

Was I young — ? Was I little — ? Was I sick — ? Was I angry — ? Was I
dead — ?

Are we holy ? Are we wicked ? Are we lame ? Are we sick ? Are we black ? Are
we angry ?

Were we ignorant — ? Were we little — ? Were we cold — ? Were we sick — ?
Were we weary — ? Were we sleepy — ?

Are you cold ? Are you warm ? Are you happy ? Are you dull ? Are you angry ?
Are you sorry ?

Were you cold — ? Were you little — ? Were you sick — ? Were you weary — ?

Is James clever ? Is he stupid ? Is he fat ? Is he tall ? Is he present ? Is he
absent ? Is he cold ? Is he sick ? Is he lame ?

Was James old — ? Was he young — ? Was he angry — ? Was he sulky — ? Was
he pleased — ?

Is Ann wise ? Is she clever ? Is she idle ? Is she blind ? Is she ignorant ?

Was Ann big — ? Was she little — ? Was she idle — ? Was she busy — ? Was
she blind — ? Was she ignorant — ?

Are the boys clean ? Are they dirty ? Are they wild ? Are they happy ? Are they
old ? Are they cold ?

Were the boys wild — ? Were they cold — ? Were they old — ? Were they
sick — ?

Are the girls pretty ? Are they haughty ? Are they idle ? Are they big ?

Were the girls saucy ? Were they haughty — ? Were they idle — ? Were they
big — ? Were they little — ?

Who are poor ? Who are rich ? Who are deaf and dumb ? Who are lame ? Who
are kind ? Who are old ? Who are young ? Who are happy ? Who are sick ?

Who were disobedient — ? Who were idle — ? Who were naked — ? Who were
polite — ? Who were little — ?

What is white ? What is black ? What is red ? What is yellow ? What is grey ?
What is hard ? What is soft ? What is blunt ? What is sharp ? What is light ?
What is heavy ? What is strong ? What is weak ? What is round ? What is crooked ?
What is straight ?

What was new — ? What was short — ? What was cheap — ? What was pretty — ?
What was rough — ? What was long — ? What was clean — ? What was bright — ?

Is the book new ? Was it new — ? Is thy hat new ? Is the master's coat ? Was his
coat red — ? Is Ann's mother poor ? Was her mother poor — ? Is she rich — ? Are
the boys clean ? Were they clean — ? Were they dirty — ? Are the girls idle — ?
Were they idle — ? Were they cold — ? Are the boys' clothes dirty ? Were their clothes
dirty — ? Were they wet — ? Are the girls' frocks old ? Were their frocks new ?
Were they dirty — ? Are our master's hands clean ? Were his hands dirty — ? Were
they clean — ? Is the floor of the school clean ? Was it dirty — ? Are the wings of
an eagle long ? Were they short — ?

Who is good ? Who is bad ? Who is cold ? Who is warm ? Who is fat ? Who is
lean ? Who is old ? Who is young ? Who is strong ? Who is weak ? Who is right-
eous ? Who is unrighteous ? Who is clever ? Who is stupid ? Who is dead ? Who
is absent ? Who is impudent ? Who is sulky ? Who is learned

Who was young — ? Who was sleepy — ? Who was ill — ? Who was lame — ?
Who was weary — ? Who was drunk — ? Who was dishonest — ? Who was learned — ?

What are round ? What are square ? What are pretty ? What are ugly ? What are
long ? What are short ? What are black ? What are white ?

QUESTIONS. (CONTINUED.)

What were young — ? What were soft — ? What were dirty — ? What were hot — ? What were small — ?

Whose face is red ? Whose coat is black ? Whose hair is red ? Whose nose is long ? Whose slate is dirty ? Whose father is dead ? Whose sister is deaf ? Whose brother is deaf ? Whose face is pale ? Whose face is ruddy ?

Whose eye was sore — ? Whose foot was sore — ? Whose father was sick — ? Whose mother was ill — ?

Whose cheeks are red ? Whose lips are thick ? Whose shoes are new ? Whose clothes are new ? Whose fingers are long ? Whose knives are sharp ? Whose parents are rich ? Whose eyes are blue ?

Whose feet were dirty — ? Whose eyes were sore — ? Whose knees were burnt — ? Whose children were little — ? Whose clothes were new — ? Whose toes were cold — ?

Am I a man ? Am I a boy ? Am I a girl ? Am I a house ? Am I a dog ? Am I a bird ?

Was I a child — ? Was I a boy — ? Was I a soldier — ? Was I a king — ? Was I a beggar — ?

Art thou a boy ? Art thou a girl ? Art thou a scholar ? Art thou a soldier ? Art thou a sailor ? Art thou a minister ? Art thou a fish ?

Wast thou an infant — ? Wast thou a girl — ? Wast thou a boy — ? Wast thou a man — ? Wast thou a woman — ? Wast thou a dog — ? Wast thou a cat — ?

Is James a man ? Is he a boy ? Is he a girl ? Is he a woman ? Is he a king ? Is he a robber ? Is he an orphan ? Is he a beggar ? Is he a porter ? Is he a soldier ? Is he a sailor ? Is he a carter ?

Was James a boy — ? Was he a girl — ? Was he a thief — ? Was he a footman — ? Was he a teacher — ? Was he a ploughman — ?

Was Ann a babe — ? Was she a woman — ? Was she a servant — ? Was she a soldier — ? Was she a weaver — ?

Is the hammer a fish ? Is it a tool ? Is it a piece of furniture ?

Is bread a drink ? Is it a tool ? Is it food ? Is it a spice ?

Is water a vegetable ? Is it a drink ? Is it a liquid ?

Is Jelly a spice ? Is it a preserve ? Is it an eatable ?

Is a horse a vegetable ? Is it an animal ? Is it a living animal ?

Is a potato a mineral ? Is it an animal ? Is it a vegetable ? Is it a fruit ?

Is iron an animal ? Is it a vegetable ? Is it a mineral ? Is it a metal ?

Is an apple a mineral ? Is it a fruit ? Is it a root ? Is it a tree ?

Is a cow a beast ? Is it a fish ? Is it a quadruped ? Is it a tame animal ?

Is a rabbit a biped ? Is it a quadruped ? Is it a beast ? Is it a bird ?

Is a sparrow an insect ? Is it a bird ? Is it an animal ? Is it a biped ?

Is a frog a bird ? Is it a reptile ? Is it an animal ? Is it a biped ?

Is a butterfly a bird ? Is it an insect ? Is it an animal ? Is it a worm ?

Is the oak a man ? Is it a tree ? Is it a metal ? Is it a vegetable ?

Is iron a vegetable ? Is it a metal ? Is it a mineral ? Is it a stone ?

Is flint a metal ? Is it a stone ? Is it a liquid ? Is it a mineral ?

Is a rail a place ? Is it a thing ? Is it a stone ? Is it an earth ?

QUESTIONS. (CONTINUED.)

Is London a person? Is it a place? Is it a town? Is it a city?
 Is a key a man? Is it a thing? Is it an object? Is it a useful thing?
 Is John a pupil? Is Mary a servant? Is Peter a garden?
 Is a beech a fruit tree? Is it a forest tree? Is it a mineral? Is it a vegetable?
 Is Mr — a tailor? Is he a shoemaker? Is he a man? Is he a gentleman?
 Is January a warm month? Is it a cold month? Is it a dry month?
 Is Summer a warm season? Is it a cold season? Is it a dark season?
 Is I a crooked letter? Is it a straight letter? Is it a broad letter?

What is a nose? What is an eye? What is a leg? What is a hat? What is a coat? What is a chair? What is a table? What is a hammer? What is a plane? What is bread? What is milk? What is ale? What is jam? What is barley-sugar? What is a horse? What is a beaver? What is a goose? What is a whale? What is a fly? What is an onion? What is gold? What is a pea? What is a soldier? What is God? What is Christ? What is an elephant? What is a sow? What is a rabbit? What is a sparrow? What is a crocodile? What is a bee? What is a leech? What is a turnip? What is a rose? What is a tulip? What is a whin? What is fir? What is beech? What is a pebble? What is a slate? What is a church? What is a house? What is John? What is Mary? What is James? What is Ann? What is a pin? What is cinder? What is a school? What is the play-ground? What is Edinburgh? What is London? What is a day? What is a key? What is a robber? What is a tailor? What is a barber? What is a shoemaker? What is a minister? What is Mr —? What is Mrs —? What is the Bible? What is string? What is good? What is tall? What is young? What is running? What is a coach? What is senna? What is colic? What is a bowl? What is a plate? What is Paris? What is Sunday? What is Monday? What is January? What is February? What is Spring? What is Summer? What is a father? What is a sister? What is a field? What is the sea? What is the ice? What is the snow? What is A? What is R? What is S? What are eyes? What are tables and chairs? What are beef and pudding? What are water and milk? What are sheep and geese? What are eagles and flies? What are potatoes and carrots? What are gold and iron? What are apples and pears? What are labourers and gardeners? What are lions? What are wolves? What are ducks and hens? What are fleas and lice? What are copper brass and steel? What are houses and bridges? What are David and Mary? What are sponges and slates? What are yesterday and to-day? What are tailors and shoemakers? What are arms and legs? What are good and bad? What are bibles and dictionaries? What are reading and writing? What are a coach and cart? What are tea and coffee? What are salts and jalap? What are small-pox and measles? What are a tub and basin? What are Tuesday and Wednesday? What are Ann and Mary? What are ice and snow? What are sleet and rain? What are Pand R?

NUMERAL PRONOMINAL ARTICLES.

This, That, (SINGULAR). **These, Those, (PLURAL).** *This is applied to a near object; That to one more distant. Yon is applied to an object, or objects still more distant. These and the other words of this class are sufficiently illustrated in the examples which follow.*

this boy.	these boys.	many pins.
that boy.	those boys.	few pins.
this girl.	these girls.	many short pins.
that girl.	those girls.	few long pins.
this tall boy.	these tall boys.	some pens.
that tall boy.	those tall boys.	some good pens.
this tall girl.	these tall girls.	some bad pens.
that tall girl.	those tall girls.	many steel pens.
this short boy.	these short boys.	no thick pens.
that short boy.	those short boys.	many thin pens.
this short girl.	these short girls.	two tall boys.
that short girl.	those short girls.	one tall boy.
this picture.	these pictures.	this tall boy.
that picture.	those pictures.	that tall boy.
this large picture.	these large pictures.	both tall boys.
that large picture.	those large pictures.	this little girl.
this small picture.	these small pictures.	that little girl.
that small picture.	those small pictures.	the one little girl.
this desk.	these desks.	the other little girl.
that desk.	those desks.	several little girls.
this long desk.	these long desks.	the first little girl.
that long desk.	those long desks.	the second little girl.
this bench.	these benches.	the third little girl.
that bench.	those benches.	the last little girl.
this long bench.	these long benches.	each little girl.
that long bench.	those long benches.	many big girls.
this pen.	these pens.	one big girl.
that pen.	those pens.	another big girl.
this short pen.	these short pens.	the other big girls.
that short pen.	those short pens.	every big girl.
this long pen.	these long pens.	this new book.
that long pen.	those long pens.	that new book.
this pencil.	these pencils.	several new books.
that pencil.	those pencils.	several old books.
this sharp pencil.	these sharp pencils.	an old book.
that sharp pencil.	those sharp pencils.	a new book.
this horse.	these horses.	two new books.
that horse.	those horses.	one new book.
this grey horse.	these grey horses.	another new book.
that black horse.	those black horses.	every new book.
this white cow.	those white cows.	every old book.

PRONOMINAL ARTICLES. (CONTINUED.)

This boy has three pence.
 That boy has six pence.
 This girl has a white frock.
 That girl has a blue frock.
 This desk has six legs.
 This animal has four legs.
 That animal has two legs.
 This man has red hair.
 That man has black hair.
 This beast has a large head.
 That beast has a small head.
 This bird has long legs.
 That bird has short legs.
 This bird has a long tail.
 That bird has a short tail.
 This reptile has a large mouth.
 That reptile has a small mouth.
 This insect has wings.
 That insect has no wings.
 This flower has six leaves.
 That flower has eight leaves.
 This shrub has many leaves.
 That shrub has few leaves.
 This tree has thick branches.
 That tree has thin branches.
 These animals have long necks.
 Those animals have short necks.
 These beasts have horns.
 Those beasts have no horns.
 These fowls have long legs.
 Those fowls have short legs.
 These men have red coats.
 Those men have black coats.
 These pupils have slates.
 Those pupils have books.
 This boy had a sister—.
 That boy had a brother—.
 This boy had a black hat—.
 That girl had a white frock—.
 These children have parents.
 Those children had measles.
 This boy had a headache—.
 That boy had a sore finger—.
 This boy has the key.
 This boy has the slate.
 That boy has the book.
 That boy has the key.
 That boy had the slates—.
 This boy has the key of the watch.
 This man has our slates.
 Those children have your knife.
 That servant has the boy's marbles.

This book is mine.
 That book is thine.
 This knife is mine.
 That knife is yours.
 These marbles are his.
 Those scissors are hers.
 This school is ours.
 That house is not ours.
 These slates are theirs.
 Those books are not theirs.
 This book was mine —.
 That slate was yours —.
 These books are yours —.
 Those keys were his —.
 This knife is sharp.
 That knife is blunt.
 That hat is black.
 This desk is long.
 That desk is short.
 This house is large.
 That house is small.
 This room is light.
 That room is dark.
 These boys are idle.
 Those boys are busy.
 These windows are clean.
 Those windows are dirty.
 These pens are good.
 Those pens are bad.
 These books are large.
 Those books are small.
 This boy was ill —.
 That boy was ill —.
 This girl was naughty —.
 That girl was naughty —.
 This knife was blunt —.
 That knife was blunt —.
 This coat is black.
 That coat is not black.
 This frock is blue.
 That frock is green.
 This boy is a shoemaker.
 That boy is a tailor.
 This lad is a printer.
 That lad is not a printer.
 This beast is a horse.
 That beast is an elephant.
 That insect is a bee.
 This bird is a linnet.
 This horse was a foal —.
 It was little —.
 That cow was a calf—.
 It was young —.
 This cat was a kitten —.
 It was a kitten —.

That man was a boy —.
 That woman was a girl —.
 That sow was a pig —.
 This hen was a chicken —.

Yon tree is high.
 Yon church is large.
 Yon man is drunk.
 Yon field is green.
 Yon steeple is high.
 Yon star is bright.
 Yon men are old.
 Yon women have baskets.
 Yon children are idle.
 Yon trees have many branches.

This has boy two blue jackets, and that boy has two black jackets.
 This girl has two pair of shoes, and three pair of boots.
 This quadruped has a long neck, and that bird has a long neck.
 These girls have clean hands, and those boys have dirty feet.
 This bird is a robin, and that bird is a sparrow.
 These animals have fins, and those animals have wings.

QUESTIONS.

Has this desk four legs?
 Has that desk six legs?
 Has this boy a sister?
 Has that girl a brother?
 Have these desks wings?
 Have those boys slates?
 Have these children clothes?
 Have those servants aprons?
 Had this girl fever—?
 Had that boy a top—?
 Had this girl a doll—?
 Had that fish wings—?
 Had this house a steeple—?
 Had those trees feet—?
 Which girl has a blue frock?
 Which desk has four legs?
 Which desk has six legs?
 Which beast has horns?
 Which bird has long legs?
 Which beast has a long neck?

PRONOMINAL ARTICLES. (CONTINUED.)

This and That with their plurals These and Those are pronouns in the following lesson.

Paper, Coal.

This is black.
That is white.
This is not white.
That is not black.

Iron, Sponge.

This is hard.
That is soft.

Desk, Ink-bottle.

This is large.
That is small.

Knife. Form.

This is long.
That is short.
This is not short.
That is not long.

This is a pin.
That is a pig.
This is a pen.
That is a window.
This is a floor.
That is a ceiling.
This is not a ceiling.
That is not a floor.
This is a house.
That is a church.
This is a school room.
That is a kitchen.
This is a boy.
That is a girl.
This is not a girl.
That is not a boy.
This is a hammer.
That is a plane.
This is water.
That is milk.
This is a day.
That is a cat.
This is not a cat.
That is not a dog.
This is a bird.
That is a fish.
This is an insect.
That is a worm.
This is a strong boy.
That is a weak girl.
This is a large room.
That is a small room.
This is a sharp knife.

That is a blunt knife.
This is my watch.
That is your slate.
This is John's book.
That is Ann's book.

slate, snuff-box

This is mine.
That is yours.
This is not yours.
That is not mine.

needle, book

This is his.
That is hers.
This is not hers.
That is not his.

house, school

This is ours.
That is theirs.
This is not theirs.
That is not ours.

John, James

This is my name.
That is your name.
This is not your name.
That is not my name.

10 years 11 years

This is his age.
That is her age.
This is not her age.
That is not his age

horse, hen

This has two legs.
That has four legs.
This has not four legs.
That has not two legs.

QUESTIONS.

Is this a desk ?
Is that a boy ?
Is that a church ?
Is this a house ?
Was this a child— ?
Was that a pig— ?
Are these bottles ?
Are those trees ?
What is this ?
What is that ?
What are these ?

What are those ?
What is my name ?
What is my age ?
What is your name ?
What is your age ?
What is her age and name ?
What is his father's name ?

MANY FEW

Many men are rich.
Many are poor.
Many are old.
Many are strong.
Many are sick.
Many boys are careless.
Many are careful.
Many are obedient.
Many are clever.
Few boys are obedient.
Few are wise.
Few are rich.
Few are good.
Many books are large.
Many are thick.
Many are thin.
Many are old.
Many are new.
Many trees are high.
Many are low.
Many are green.
Many are thick.
Many stones are white.
Many are hard.
Many are soft.
Many are light.
Many fishes are large.
Many are small.
Many are not large.
Many are not small.
Many coats are black.
Many are blue.
Many are green.
Many are yellow.
Many are red.

I have many books.
You have few.
A minister has many.
John has not many.
He has few.
I have few knives.
I have not many.

PRONOMINAL ARTICLES (*CONTINUED.*)

A cutler has knives.
A lady has few.
Rich men have pounds.
Poor men have not many.
They have few.

SEVERAL, SOME

Several boys are idle.
Several are big.
Several are clever.
Several are stupid.
Some girls are neat.
Some are not neat.
Some are clever.
Some are dull.
Some men are rich.
Some are poor.
Some are old.
Some are not good.
Some are bad.
Some beasts have horns.
Some have not.
Some have large heads.
Some have long necks.
Some have long tails.
Some have four feet.
Some have two feet.
I have some money.
John had some —.
Ann has some.
Mary has not some.

NO, NONE

I have no horns.
You have none.
She has none.
A cow has two.
A goat has two.
A lion has none.
No men have horns.
No worms have legs.
No sinner is holy.
None is righteous.
None is good.

ANY, ALL

All men are not soldiers.
All are not poor.
All are not rich.
Some are poor.
Some are rich.
All boys have heads.
All have legs.
All have feet.

All birds have wings.
I have not any.
You have not any.
A man has not any.

EACH, EVERY

Each boy has a slate.
Each has a pencil-case.
Each has two eyes.
Each has two legs.
Each has fingers and thumbs.
Each girl has a comb.
Each has a pair of scissors.
Each has two pairs of shoes.
Each foot has five toes.
Each room has a door.
Every pig is dirty.
Every slate is hard.
Every bird has wings.
Every tree has leaves.
Every book has leaves.

EITHER OR, NEITHER
NOR*Ann, Mary.*

Either Ann or Mary has my knife.
Either Ann or Mary has my box.
Neither Ann nor Mary is dishonest.
Neither Ann nor Mary is old.
Neither Ann nor Mary is drunk.
Neither Ann nor Mary is fat.

BOTH, ONLY

Snow, Bread.

Both are white.
Both are soft.
Both are soft.
Neither is heavy.
Neither is hard.

Peter, Ann.

Both are tall.
Both are obedient.
Both are clever.
Both have shoes.
Both have clothes.
Both have slates.

THE ONE, THE OTHER.

bird, fish.

The one has wings.
The other has fins.
The one has feathers.
The other has scales.

Au elephant, A mouse.

The one is large.
The other is small.
The one has a large head.
The other has a small head.
One has four legs.
The other has four legs.
Both have tails.
Both have eyes.

Day, Night.

The one is light.
The other is dark.
One has the sun.
The other the moon.

King, Beggar.

The one is rich.
The other is poor.
The one has fine clothes.
The other has bad clothes.
One has many servants.
The other has none.

ONE, ANOTHER.

I have many pupils.
One is strong.
Another is strong.
One is weak.
Another is weak.
One is clever.
Another is stupid.
One is not well.
Another is well.
One is old.
Another is young.
One has red hair.
Another has red hair.
One has blue eyes.
Another has blue eyes.
One has a kite.
Another has a kite.
One has several brothers.
Another has none.
One has parents.
Another has none.
This is a watch.
That is another.
That is a clock.
This is a desk.
That is another.
I have one coat.
I have another.
I have one hat.
I have another.

PRONOMINAL ARTICLES. [CONTINUED.]

When two persons or things are contrasted This and These refer to the nearer or last mentioned ; that and those to the more distant or first mentioned : as Virtue and vice are as opposite to each other as light and darkness ; that ennobles the mind, this debases it.

Former and latter are often used instead of this and that .

That and this are seldom applied to persons ; but former and latter are applied to either persons or things.

THIS THAT

Coal and chalk are minerals ;
that is black, this is white,
Wine and water are liquids ; that
is intoxicating, this is not.
Sunflowers and snowdrops are
flowers ; these are white, those
are yellow.
Dogs and foxes are quadrupeds,
those are useful, these are
mischievous.
Pepper and mustard are spices ;
this is native, that is foreign.

THE FIRST THE LAST.

King Queen

The first is masculine.
The last is feminine.
The first has a crown.
The last has a crown.
Both have crowns.

Pen Pens

The first is singular.
The last is plural.

ink milk

The first is black.
The last is white.

A crow a canary

The first is black.
The last is yellow.
The first has wings.
The last has wings.
Both have four wings.

THE FORMER THE LATTER

a sponge a stone

The former is light.
The latter is heavy
The former is soft.
The latter is hard.

Asses apes

The former have long ears.
The latter have short ears.
The former have no horns.
The latter have no horns.
The latter have no tails.

Snow and ice are both states of
water ; that is soft, this is hard.
Horses and cows are quadrupeds ;
those have shoes, these have
none ; those have no horns,
these have horns.

Coats and jackets are parts of
clothing ; the former have tails,
the latter have none.

Churches and bridges are build-
ings ; those have windows,
these have none.

A king and a queen have crowns ;
the former is masculine, the
latter is feminine.

Ostriches and sparrows are birds ;
those are large, these are small.

QUESTIONS.

Are many men rich ?
Are many men poor ?
Are many boys careless ?
Are many pens bad ?
Are many flowers pretty ?
Are many shoes white ?
Are many houses new ?
Are many men kings ?
Are many boys soldiers ?
Are many children pupils ?
Have many men coaches ?
Have many women beards ?
Have many boys red hair ?
Have many girls ear-rings ?
How many eyes have you ?
How many heads have I ?
How many legs has a horse ?
How many legs have two horses ?
How many pupils have I ?
How many parents has John ?
How many sons has God ?
How many days has a week ?
How many seasons has a year ?
How many toes have two boys ?

How many legs and arms have five boys ?
How many days have June and July ?
How many minutes have two hours ?
How many trunks have six elephants ?
How many months has Summer ?
How many Christmas days have six years ?
How many days has February ?

Have you any money ?
Have I any money ?
Have you any houses ?
Have you any marbles ?
Have you any sisters ?
Has John any keys ?
Has he any buttons ?
Has he any knives ?
Has Ann any apples ?
Has she any needles ?
Has she any books ?
Has she any sheep ?
Has a tree any roots ?
Has it any legs ?
Has it any leaves ?
Has a lion any arms ?
Has it any claws ?
Has it any fingers ?
Has a house any win-
dows ?
Has it any eyes ?
Has it any arms ?
Have I any swords ?
Have we any fields ?
Have I any garden ?
Are any beggars old ?
Are tables round ?
Are any square ?
Are houses high ?
Are any low ?
Are any new ?
Are any old ?
Have all men wives ?
Have all men heads ?
Have all men legs ?
Have all birds wings ?
Have all cows horns ?
Are all men bad ?
Are all idle ?
Are all holy ?
Are all clever ?
Are all boys deaf ?
Are all girls dumb ?
Are all lame ?
Is every cat black ?
Is every negro black ?
Is every tree green ?

PRONOMINAL ARTICLES.

QUESTIONS CONTINUED.

Gold Silver

Is the former yellow ?
 Is the latter yellow ?
 Is the former white ?
 Is the first heavy ?
 Is the last heavy ?
 Is the one yellow ?
 Is the other yellow ?
 Are both yellow ?
 Are both white ?
 Are both heavy ?
 Is the former a metal ?
 Is the latter a metal ?
 Are both metals ?

coal, mouse, tree

Are these things ?
 Are these minerals ?
 Is one a mineral ?
 Are these animals ?
 Is one an animal ?
 Are these vegetables ?
 Is one a vegetable ?
 Is every one a mineral ?
 Are all animals ?
 What is the first ?
 What is the last ?

Two eyes

What are these ?
 Are both square ?
 Are both round ?
 Is the one round ?
 Is the other round ?

Books

What are these ?
 Are all thick ?
 Are some thick ?
 Are none thick ?
 Is any one thick ?
 Are any thin ?
 Is any thin ?

Paper Rag

What are these ?
 Are both hard ?
 Are both vegetable ?
 Is either soft ?

Ink Milk

What are these ?
 Are both white ?
 Are both black ?
 Is either red ?
 Are both liquid ?

Ivory Leather

What are these ?
 Are both white ?
 Is the former white ?
 Is the latter white ?
 Are both odorous ?
 Are both animal ?
 Are both heavy ?
 Are both pliable ?

Pen Pin

What is this ?
 What is that ?
 Are both metal ?
 Is either animal ?
 Are both pointed ?

Bee Fly

Have both stings ?
 Has either a sting ?
 Have both legs ?
 Have both wings
 How many wings has this ?
 How many wings has that ?

Tulip Pink

What are these ?
 Have both odour ?
 Has either odour ?
 Has this odour ?
 Has that ?
 Has the former a stem ?
 Has the latter a stem ?

Grass Hay

Are both dry ?
 Are both green ?
 Has this colour ?
 Has that ?
 Which is green ?

Pebble Egg

What are these ?
 Are both oval ?
 Are both eatable ?
 Is either eatable ?
 Is one mineral ?
 Is the other mineral ?
 Is it animal ?

Two plums

Are both round ?
 Is one oval ?
 Is either round ?
 Are both nice ?
 Are they fruits ?

Shilling Penny

What are both these ?
 Are both metal ?
 Are both money ?
 Are both useful ?
 Is either white ?

Wafers

Are all these round ?
 Are all blue ?
 Are any blue ?
 Are any red ?
 Are any yellow ?
 Is every one round ?
 Is one green ?
 Is another white ?
 Is another black ?

Vinegar Treacle

Are both sweet ?
 Are both brown ?
 Is either sour ?
 Are both liquid ?
 Are both thick ?
 Are both sticky ?
 Are both soft ?

Snow Fur

Are both white ?
 Are both warm ?
 Is one cold ?
 Is the other cold ?
 Is either hard ?
 Which ?
 Is either white ?
 Is either black ?

~~~~~  
 Whose book is this ?  
 Whose book is that ?  
 Whose books are these ?  
 Whose books are those ?  
 Whose house is this ?  
 Whose house is that ?  
 Whose pens are these ?  
 Whose pens are those ?  
 Whose knife is this ?  
 Whose knife is that ?  
 Whose knives are these ?  
 Whose pens are those ?  
 Whose name is that ?  
 Whose hat is that ?  
 Whose watch is that ?  
 Whose place is this ?  
 Whose keys are these ?  
 Whose clothes are those ?

## PREPOSITIONS.

*I. Prepositions that may be contrasted.*

|                 |                   |
|-----------------|-------------------|
| in              | out of            |
| into            | out of            |
| on              | off               |
| upon            | off               |
| above           | { below           |
|                 | { beneath         |
| over            | { under           |
|                 | { underneath      |
| { to            | from              |
| { towards       |                   |
| up              | down              |
| before          | behind            |
| within          | without           |
| inside of       | outside of        |
| along           | { across          |
|                 | { athwart         |
| before          | after             |
| on this side of | { on that side of |
|                 | { beyond          |
| { near to       | far from          |
| { nigh to       |                   |
| with            | without           |
| for             | against           |

*II. Prepositions of similar meaning not included in Class I.*

between  
betwixt  
  
through  
throughout  
  
except  
excepting  
  
regarding  
respecting  
concerning  
  
amid  
amidst  
  
among  
amongst  
  
around  
round  
round about  
  
at  
beside  
by

*III. Prepositions not included in the foregoing classes.*

besides  
instead of  
according to  
till  
during

## EXERCISES ON PREPOSITIONS.

A bird *in* a cage, a mouse *in* a trap, a key *in* a lock, an egg *in* a nest, a cat *in* a bag, water *in* a tub, a fish *in* the sea, a horse *in* a stable, a rat *in* a hole, a hen *in* a garden, a bee *in* a hive, an eel *in* a river, a boy *in* a bed, a babe *in* a cradle, a sailor *in* a boat, a nail *in* the floor, a tack *in* the carpet, a pin *in* a frock, books *in* the press, a pipe *in* a man's mouth, a lady *in* the carriage, coals *in* the cellar, a cork *in* the bottle, people *in* a room, the bottle *in* the press, a church *in* a city, a sponge *in* water, a ball *in* a cannon, a fire *in* the school, the gardener *in* the garden, the cook *in* the kitchen, the clergyman *in* church, God *in* heaven, Christ *in* heaven, the Holy Spirit *in* heaven, angels *in* heaven, good spirits *in* heaven.

## PREPOSITIONS (CONTINUED.)

A bird *out of* a cage, a key *out of* a lock, a fish *out of* the sea, a mouse *out of* its hole, a boy *out of* bed, a cork *out of* a bottle, a man *out of* town, a sponge *out of* water, a plant *out of* the ground, smoke *out of* a chimney, a book *out of* the press, boys *out of* school.

A pen *on* the desk, a bottle *upon* the desk, a boy *on* a chair, a man *on* the horse, a cat *upon* a trunk, a boy *on* a wall, a bird *upon* a guide-post, a book *upon* a table, things *on* a table, tools *on* a bench, a hat *upon* a nail, a kettle *upon* the fire, a ship *on* the sea, money *on* a shelf, a carpet *on* the floor, a shoe *on* a foot, a hat *on* a head, a roof *on* a house, sheep *on* a hill, a man *on* the top of the mountain, a thimble *on* the end of a staff, a cow *on* a road.

A book *under* the desk, a cat *under* the chair, a mouse *under* the bed, the mouth *under* the nose, a man *under* a tree, a lady *under* an umbrella, the chin *below* the mouth, the floor *below* our feet, the earth *below* our feet, the earth *below* the sky.

A boy *with* a man, a woman *with* a child, a soldier *with* a gun and a sword, a soldier *with* a red coat, a boy *with* a blue jacket, a girl *with* red hair, a man, *with* a long nose, a cat *with* six kittens, a mare *with* a foal, a cow *with* a calf, a bull *with* long horns, a man *with* a black skin, a boy *with* a pale face, a girl *with* red cheeks, a house *with* wings, a bird *with* a long neck, a beast *with* long legs, a tree *with* long arms, a fish *with* a large head, a desk *with* four legs, a stool *with* three legs, bread *with* butter, a house *with* a garden, a church *with* a steeple, an insect *with* four wings and six legs, a coat *with* long tails, tea *with* cream, a gentleman *with* spectacles, a lady *with* a parasol, a house *with* twelve windows, a boy *with* a dirty face, a master *with* no pupils, a man *with* much money

A boy *without* shoes, a girl *without* a bonnet, a cow *without* horns, a house *without* windows, a bird *without* a tail, a box *without* a lid, bread *without* butter, a soldier *without* a gun, a church *without* a steeple, a field *without* a hedge, a coat *without* buttons, a man *without* money, a cat *without* kittens, a tree *without* leaves, a man *without* a family, poor people *without* bibles, a boy *without* a home.

A boy *from* the country, smoke *from* the fire, fish *from* the sea, a gentleman *from* London, an elephant *from* Asia, a lion *from* Africa, light *from* the sun, light *from* a candle, heat *from* the fire, rain *from* the clouds, four marbles *from* six marbles, a negro *from* Africa, a lady *from* Ireland, Jesus Christ *from* Heaven.

A boy *at* school, people *at* church, a beggar *at* the door, a bird *at* the window, a dog *near* the gate, a cottage *near* this house, a house *nigh* a church, a tree *nigh* a river, a boy *beside* a man, a girl *beside* her mother.

A boy *up* the stairs, a sweep *up* the chimney, a balloon *up* in the air, a squirrel *up* a tree, a bell *up* in the steeple, a man *up* the ladder.

A pail *down* the well, the servant *down* stairs, colliers *down* the pit, boys *down* the valley, a mouse *down* the hole.

A boy *before* the horse, a chair *before* the fire, the garden *before* the house.

A garden *behind* a house, a mouse *behind* the clock, the cat *behind* the bed.

A greyhound *after* a hare, a cat *after* a mouse, a dog *after* a cat, a policeman *after* a thief.

The brow *above* the nose, the bedroom *above* the school, the clouds *above* the earth, the ceiling *above* the floor.

The worms *underneath* the grass, the room *beneath* the school, the water *underneath* the earth, the sea *beneath* the clouds.

The maps *against* the wall, the boy *against* the door, the cart *against* the house.

The ruler *along* the desk, the people *along* the road, the form *along* the desk.

A boy *across* the desk, a broom *across* the lobby, a road *across* the garden.

The hoop *about* the barrel, a napkin *round* his neck, boys *round* a pole.

A knife *through* an apple, a fork *through* a potato, a hole *through* a door.

The nose *between* the eyes, John *betwixt* Robert and James, the room *between* the mess-room and laundry.

a knife *among* the pens, a boy *amongst* the girls, a cow *amidst* the trees, a cock *amidst* the hens.

## PREPOSITIONS, WITH TO HAVE AND TO BE.

He has two shillings *in* his pocket. John has a marble *in* his mouth. The master has a book *in* his pocket. The boys have new clothes *in* their boxes. That old man has a staff *in* his hand. He has a bird *in* a cage. She has a brother *in* America. Alexander has a pen-knife *in* his hand.

You had a knife *with* four blades —. He had a penknife *with* a white handle —. Robert has a jacket *with* yellow buttons. She has a book *with* many pictures. You had a bird *with* a red breast —. The gentleman had a staff *with* a silver top —. His father has a gun *with* two barrels.

James has a vest *without* pockets. I have a pin *without* a head. Her father has a cow *without* horns. The baker has a basket of bread *on* his head. That porter has a heavy trunk *on* his back. She had a blister *on* her breast —. His mother has a gold ring *on* her finger. The poor boy had no shoes *on* his feet —. He has the penny *under* his feet. The clergyman had a neckcloth *about* his neck —. You had crape *about* your hat —. He has a staff *up* stairs. That gentleman has a house *near* Glasgow.

Many books are *in* the presses. Six ladies were *in* school —. Four eggs are *in* the bird's nest. The tongue is *in* the mouth. The brain is *in* the skull. Trees and flowers are *in* the garden. The cook is *in* the kitchen. The dog is *in* the kennel. This lady was *in* France —. Mary was never *in* a ship. His father was *in* the parlour —.

The boys and girls are *in* the playground. Two yellow birds are *in* the cage. The butterfly was *in* the chrysalis last Spring. Ink is *in* this bottle.

Jonah was *in* the belly of a fish. Daniel was *in* a den of lions. Jesus Christ was *in* the grave for three days. Holy angels are *in* heaven. Wicked spirits are *in* hell. Edinburgh is *in* Scotland. Liverpool is *in* England. Jerusalem is *in* Judea. William is *in* the first class. Ann is *in* the third class.

Our slates are *on* the desk. My hat is *on* my head. The lid is *on* the pot. The kettle is *on* the kitchen-fire. A slater is *on* the top of the house. John was *on* the top of a coach —. A bird is *on* yon tree.

We are *within* the house. The picture is *within* the frame. The books are *within* the cupboard.

The lid is *off* the pot. The kettle is *off* the fire. The handle is *off* the door. John is *off* his seat. The map is *off* the nail.

My penknife is *among* the pens in the penbox. Peas are *among* the barley. Carrots were *among* the onions in the garden —. A hare is *among* the wheat. A rat is *among* the straw.

The ceiling is *above* our heads. The nose is *above* the mouth. The queen is *above* us. God is *above* all people. His uncle is *above* fifty years of age.

The chin is *below* the mouth. The cat is *below* the sofa. Two sponges are *below* the desk. The chickens are *under* the hen. Two men are *under* the tree. The dog is *under* the table.

The bird is *out of* the cage. The dog is *out of* the kennel. The master is *out of* the school. The gardener is not *out of* the garden. James is *out of* his seat.

Six hoops are *about* the barrel. A wall is *about* our garden. A collar is *about* the dog's neck. A band is *about* her waist. A hedge is *about* the field. The atmosphere is *about* the earth. The cat is *about* the room. Benjamin is *about* ten years of age.

It is — miles *from* — to —. His father is *from* home. James is *from* school. That boy is *from* Paisley.

The ceiling is *over* our heads. The bedroom is *over* the school. The sky is *over* all men. The general is *over* the soldiers. Man is *over* the creation. God is *over* man.

Robert is *with* his mother in the garden. Ann was *with* her father in London —. The master was *with* his pupils in the country. That poor boy is *without* money and friends. John was *without* shoes in the country.

The ruler is *across* the desk. Many bridges are *across* the canal.

The cane is *along* the desk. The dog is *through* the hedge. A hole is *through* the wall. This nail is *through* the wood. Her earrings are *through* her ears.

Robert is *near* the fire. A poor man is *at* the door. The horses are *at* the plough. The meat is *before* the fire. This boy is *before* that. Mary is *beside* Ann. Windsor is *near* London. Five bridges are *over* the river Clyde at Glasgow. A cover is *over* the table.

Mrs — the matron is *up* stairs. A slater was *up* the long ladder —. The bedrooms are *up* stairs. The cook is *down* stairs. I was never *down* a coal pit —. A greyhound is *after* a hare. The cat is *after* birds in the garden.

## COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES.

**GENERAL RULE.**—*There are three degrees of comparison, the positive, the comparative, and the superlative. The positive is the adjective expressing the quality of an object without any increase or diminution. The comparative is so called because it draws a comparison between two or more objects. When two things are compared, the one is superior, inferior, or equal to the other ;—hence three sorts of comparison ; superiority, inferiority, and equality. The adjective is in the superlative degree when it expresses the quality in a very high, or in the highest state.*

**CLASS I.**—*Adjectives of one syllable are generally compared by adding er for the comparative, and est for the superlative degree ; as, long, longer, longest.*

|        |          |        |        |        |       |
|--------|----------|--------|--------|--------|-------|
| tall   | fast     | crisp  | sly    | sharp  | steep |
| rich   | slow     | dull   | gay    | still  | mean  |
| poor   | small    | clever | bright | long   | full  |
| clean  | great    | neat   | dark   | kind   | dear  |
| quick  | straight | cold   | light  | cross  | cheap |
| narrow | tight    | warm   | sour   | smart  | quiet |
| broad  | slack    | strong | sweet  | plain  | sick  |
| black  | new      | weak   | bitter | open   | fond  |
| high   | salt     | wicked | cruel  | bold   | damp  |
| low    | fresh    | young  | cool   | rough  | mild  |
| deep   | thick    | fair   | soft   | smooth | meek  |
| proud  | lean     | clear  | hard   | wild   | loud  |
| vain   | stiff    | shy    | blunt  | swift  | stout |

## EXERCISES.

A tall man, a taller man, the tallest man.  
 a rich gentleman, a richer gentleman, the richest gentleman.  
 a poor man, a poorer man, the poorest man.  
 a clean coat, a cleaner coat, the cleanest coat.  
 a quick boy, a quicker boy, the quickest boy.  
 a narrow road, a narrower road, the narrowest road.  
 a broad street, a broader street, the broadest street.  
 a black man, a blacker man, the blackest man.  
 a high tree, a higher tree, the highest tree.  
 a low house, a lower house, the lowest house.  
 a deep well, a deeper well, the deepest well.  
 a proud lady, a prouder lady, the proudest lady.  
 a vain girl, a vainer girl, the vainest girl.  
 a fast horse, a faster horse, the fastest horse.  
 a slow boy, a slower boy, the slowest boy.  
 a small dog, a smaller dog, the smallest dog.  
 a great storm, a greater storm, the greatest storm.  
 a straight stick, a straighter stick, the straightest stick.  
 a tight band, a tighter band, the tightest band.  
 a slack rope, a slacker rope, the slackest rope.

COMPARISON (*CONTINUED.*)

A new book, a newer book, the newest book.  
 a young man, a younger man, the youngest man.  
 a fair child, a fairer child, the fairest child.  
 a clear bottle, a clearer bottle, the clearest bottle.  
 a shy girl, a shyer girl, the shyest girl.  
 a sly fox, a slyer fox the slyest fox.  
 a gay person, a gayer person, the gayest person.  
 a bright star, a brighter star, the brightest star.  
 a dark cave, a darker cave, the darkest cave.  
 a light feather, a lighter feather, the lightest feather.  
 a sweet apple, a sweeter apple, the sweetest apple.  
 a bitter draught, a bitterer draught, the bitterest draught  
 a soft pillow, a softer pillow, the softest pillow.  
 a hard stone, a harder stone, the hardest stone.  
 a blunt knife, a blunter knife, the bluntest knife.  
 a sharp axe, a sharper axe, the sharpest axe.  
 a still water, a stiller water, the stillest water.  
 a long cucumber, a longer cucumber, the longest cucumber.  
 salt meat, salter meat, the saltiest meat.  
 a fresh fish, a fresher fish, the freshest fish.  
 a thick door, a thicker door, the thickest door.  
 a lean cow, a leaner cow, the leanest cow.  
 a stiff pony, a stiffer pony, the stiffest pony.  
 a crisp biscuit, a crisper biscuit, the crispest biscuit.  
 a dull boy, a duller boy, the dullest boy.  
 a clever pupil, a cleverer pupil, the cleverest pupil.  
 a neat dress, a neater dress, the neatest dress.  
 an old book, an older book, the oldest book.  
 a cold night, a colder night, the coldest night.  
 a warm coat, a warmer coat, the warmest coat.  
 a strong horse, a stronger horse, the strongest horse.  
 a weak pony, a weaker pony, the weakest pony.  
 wicked men, wickeder men, the wickedest men.

I have a long pen, he has a longer pen, but she has the longest pen.  
 His book is thick, her book is thicker, but my book is the thickest.  
 His pen is short, my pen is shorter, but her pen is shortest.  
 His pen is short, mine is shorter, but hers is shortest.  
 Silver is bright, gold is brighter, but the sun is brightest.  
 Ingleborough is high, Skiddaw is higher, but Scafell is highest.  
 Wood is hard, coal is harder, but stone is hardest.  
 A river is deep, a lake is deeper, but the ocean is deepest.  
 A hare is swift, a greyhound is swifter, but a race-horse is swiftest.  
 November is cold, December is colder, but January is coldest.  
 Some plums are sweet, sugar is sweeter, but honey is the sweetest  
 A rook is swift, a pigeon is swifter, but a swallow is the swiftest.

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

Buttermilk is sour, crabs are sourer, but vinegar is sourest.

An axe is sharp, a knife is sharper, but a razor is the sharpest.

Silver is hard, brass is harder, but steel is the hardest.

A mastiff is bold, a bull dog is bolder, but a lion is the boldest.

Silk is dear, satin is dearer, but velvet is dearest.

A desk is smooth, a slate is smoother, but glass is smoothest.

A desk has a smooth surface, a slate has a smoother surface, but glass has the smoothest surface.

Ivory is white, milk is whiter, but snow is whitest.

A house is large, a church is larger, but a castle is largest.

Saul was proud, Rehoboam was prouder, but Nebuchadnezzar was the proudest.

Saul was a proud king, Rehoboam was a prouder king, but Nebuchadnezzar was the proudest king.

David was meek, Samuel was meeker, but Moses was the meekest.

Palestine is a warm country, Arabia is a warmer country, but Egypt is the warmest country.

Wool is soft, feathers are softer, but down is the softest.

Miss F. has a plain frock, A. F. has a plainer frock, but A. V. has the plainest frock.

River-water is clear, sea-water is clearer, but spring-water is the clearest.

The water of the river is clear, the water of the sea is clearer, but the water of springs is the clearest.

The water of a river is clear, that of the sea is clearer, but that of springs is the clearest.

Bark has a bitter flavour, orange peel has a bitterer flavour, but hops have the bitterest flavour.

Spain is a near country, France is a nearer country, but Belgium is the nearest country.

The mountains of England are high, the mountains of Scotland are higher, but the mountains of Switzerland are the highest.

The mountains of England are high, those of Scotland are higher, but those of Switzerland are the highest.

S. was sick, M. was sicker, but T. was sickest.

James had a rough coat, Isaac had a rougher coat, but John had the roughest coat.

Their clothes are new, his clothes are newer, but your clothes are the newest.

William was clever, John was cleverer, but Henry was the cleverest.

The American Indians are dark, the Egyptians are darker, but the Africans are the darkest.

That house is near, that carriage is nearer, but this man is the nearest.

Mr. H. is tall, Mr. S. is taller, but Mr. B. is tallest.

M. B. is young, C. B. is younger, but A. B. is the youngest.

A bear is strong, a lion is stronger, but an elephant is the strongest.

Cain was wicked, Pharoah was wickeder, but Judas was the wickedest.

A sparrow is a small bird, a wren is a smaller bird, but the humming-bird is the smallest.

Some rivers are straight, some roads are straighter, but the railroads are the straightest.

A rhinoceros is slow, an elephant is slower, but a sloth is the slowest.

Apple-trees are low, raspberry-bushes are lower, but gooseberry-bushes are the lowest.

J. H. is weak, J. S. is weaker, but H. F. is weakest.

A walrus is a great animal, an elephant is a greater animal, but a whale is the greatest animal.

G. C. is lean, J. H. is leaner, but B. D. is the leanest.

— had a smart ribbon, — had a smarter ribbon, but — had the smartest ribbon,

A channel is narrow, a strait is narrower, but a brook is the narrowest.

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

CLASS II.—*Adjectives of one syllable which end in e in the positive take r in the comparative, and st in the superlative; and dissyllables ending in e are similarly compared, as fine, finer, finest; feeble, feebler, feeblest.*

|        |        |      |        |        |       |
|--------|--------|------|--------|--------|-------|
| coarse | feeble | pale | rude   | fierce | close |
| fine   | large  | sore | polite | vile   | lone  |
| white  | loose  | ripe | stale  | like   | lame  |
| humble | wide   | wise | tame   | able   | nice  |

A ripe plum, a riper plum, the ripest plum.  
 a lame man, a lamer man, the lamest man.  
 a wise man, a wiser man, the wisest man.  
 a nice book, a nicer book, the nicest book.  
 an humble person, an humbler person, the humblest person.  
 a large garden, a larger garden, the largest garden.  
 a loose tooth, a looser tooth, the loosest tooth.  
 a wide gate, a wider gate, the widest gate.  
 a pale lady, a paler lady, the palest lady.  
 a sore hand, a sorer hand, the sorest hand.  
 a coarse shirt, a coarser shirt, the coarsest shirt.  
 a rude girl, a ruder girl, the rudest girl.  
 a polite boy, a politer boy, the politest boy.  
 a stale loaf, a staler loaf, the stalest loaf.  
 a vile man, a viler man, the vilest man.  
 a close dress, a closer dress, the closest dress.

Pudding is nice, plumcake is nicer, but wedding-cake is nicest.  
 May is a fine month, June is a finer month, but July is the finest month.  
 Elijah was a wise man, Samuel was a wiser man, but Solomon was the wisest man.  
 Milk is white, chalk is whiter, but snow is the whitest.  
 A river is wide, a lake is wider, but a sea is the widest.  
 A horse is tame, a cow is tamer, but a sheep is the tamest.  
 A race-horse is large, a cart-horse is larger, but a waggon-horse is the largest.  
 A cat is like to a lion, a tiger is liker, but a lioness is the likest.  
 Some cats are fierce, lions are fiercer, but tigers are the fiercest.  
 The island of New Zealand is large, the island of Britain is larger, but New Holland is the largest.  
 Daniel was humble, Joseph was humbler, but Mary was the humblest.  
 — is lame, — is lamer, but — is the lamest.  
 Paris is a large city, New York is a larger city, but London is the largest city.  
 — has sore eyes, — has sorer eyes, but — has the sorest eyes.  
 — is rude, — is ruder, but — is the rudest.  
 —'s clothes are loose, —'s clothes are looser but —'s clothes are the loosest.  
 The finger of — is sore, the toe of — is sorer, but the arm of — is the sorest.  
 — has coarse clothes, — has coarser clothes, but — has the coarsest clothes.  
 The cheeks of — are pale, those of — are paler, but those of — are the palest.  
 At the beginning of July gooseberries were ripe, in the middle of July they were riper, but at the end of July they were the ripest.  
 A house in a village is lone, one on a by-road is loner, but one on a common is the lonest.



## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

**CLASS III.**—*When the positive ends in a single consonant, preceded by a single vowel, the consonant is generally doubled before er and est, as fat, fatter, fattest.*

|      |     |     |      |      |      |
|------|-----|-----|------|------|------|
| hot  | big | wet | slim | flat | dim  |
| glad | sad | fat | mad  | thin | grim |

## EXERCISES.

A hot iron, a hotter iron, the hottest iron.  
 a glad girl, a gladder girl, the gladdest girl.  
 a big horse, a bigger horse, the biggest horse.  
 wet weather, wetter weather, the wettest weather.  
 a fat sow, a fatter sow, the fattest sow.  
 a slim boy, a slimmer boy, the slimmest boy.  
 a thin board, a thinner board, the thinnest board.  
 a flat roof, a flatter roof, the flattest roof.  
 a mad bull, a madder bull, the maddest bull.

May has hot weather, June has hotter weather, but July has the hottest weather.  
 The south of France is hot, the south of Spain is hotter, but the interior of Africa is the hottest.

Tuesday was wet, Wednesday was wetter, but Thursday was the wettest.  
 Some women are mad, some drunkards are madder, but lunatics are the maddest.  
 Mr — is fat, Mr — is fatter, but Mr — is the fattest.

— is a sad boy, — is a sadder boy, but — is the saddest boy.

March is a wet month, April is a wetter month, but November is the wettest month.  
 His boots are thin, his shoes are thinner, but his pumps are the thinnest.

— has a slim waist, — has a slimmer waist, but — has the slimmest waist.  
 — has a big marble, — has a bigger marble, but — has the biggest marble.  
 England is a flat country, Belgium is a flatter country, but Holland is the flattest country.

Writing-paper is thin, printing-paper is thinner, but tissue-paper is the thinnest.

**CLASS IV.**—*Dissyllables ending in y change y into i before er and est but if a vowel precedes y it is not changed; as busy, busier, busiest.*

|         |         |        |        |         |        |
|---------|---------|--------|--------|---------|--------|
| pretty  | worthy  | greedy | holy   | hungry  | misty  |
| ugly    | wealthy | muddy  | airy   | thirsty | greasy |
| naughty | shabby  | mouldy | angry  | lazy    | foggy  |
| happy   | snowy   | heavy  | cloudy | merry   | boggy  |
| silly   | stormy  | ruddy  | clumsy | nasty   | sunny  |
| dirty   | tipsy   | curly  | comely | rainy   | dewy   |
| healthy | sickly  | funny  | gloomy | busy    | saucy  |

a greedy boy, a greedier boy, the greediest boy.  
 a muddy pond, a muddier pond, the muddiest pond.  
 curly hair, curlier hair, the curliest hair.  
 a funny boy, a funnier boy, the funniest boy.  
 an airy room, an airier room, the airiest room.  
 an angry tiger, an angrier tiger, the angriest tiger.  
 a cloudy sky, a cloudier sky, the cloudiest sky.

COMPARISON (*CONTINUED.*)

a clumsy boy, a clumsier boy, the clumsiest boy.  
 a comely person, a comelier person, the comeliest person.  
 a gloomy cavern, a gloomier cavern, the gloomiest cavern.  
 a hungry lion, a hungrier lion, the hungriest lion.  
 a thirsty dog, a thirstier dog, the thirstiest dog.  
 a lazy boy, a lazier boy, the laziest boy.  
 a merry dancer, a merrier dancer, the merriest dancer.  
 a nasty smell, a nastier smell, the nastiest smell.  
 a rainy morning, a rainier morning, the rainiest morning.  
 a shabby coat, a shabbier coat, the shabbiest coat.  
 a snowy day, a snowier day, the snowiest day.  
 a stormy sea, a stormier sea, the stormiest sea.  
 a rainy season, a rainier season, the rainiest season.  
 a wealthy merchant, a wealthier merchant, the wealthiest merchant.  
 a pretty toy, a prettier toy, the prettiest toy.  
 an ugly box, an uglier box, the ugliest box.  
 a greasy apron, a greasier apron, the greasiest apron.  
 a happy child, a happier child, the happiest child.

—— has curly hair, —— has curlier hair, but —— has the curliest hair.

Ireland is a healthy country, Scotland is a healthier country, but England is the healthiest country.

Iron is a heavy metal, lead is a heavier metal, but gold and platina are the heaviest metals.

—— is a silly girl, —— is a sillier girl, but —— is the silliest girl.

Newcastle has pretty streets, London has prettier streets, but Edinburgh has the prettiest streets.

January is a stormy month, February is a stormier month, but March is the stormiest month.

—— is a naughty boy, —— is a naughtier boy, —— is the naughtiest boy.

—— has a dirty face, —— has a dirtier face, but —— has the dirtiest face.

Coal is heavy, stone is heavier, but iron is the heaviest.

Tuesday was a rainy day, Wednesday was a rainier day, but Thursday was the rainiest day.

Harriet had a pretty doll, Ann had a prettier doll, but Charlotte had the prettiest doll.

The town is airy, the common is airier, but the mountain is the airiest.

John had dirty shoes yesterday, William had dirtier shoes, but Thomas had the dirtiest shoes.

Last January was foggy, last December was foggier, but November was foggiest.

We had foggy weather last January, foggier weather last December, but the foggiest weather last November.

The children were merry last February, they were merrier last December, but they were merriest in June.

—— had an ugly face, —— had an uglier face, but —— had the ugliest face.

—— is a lazy boy, —— is a lazier boy, but —— is the laziest boy.

Foxes have a nasty smell, tainted fish has a nastier smell, but rotten eggs have the nastiest smell.

The clothes of —— are shabby, those of —— are shabbier, but those of —— are the shabbiest.

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

CLASS V—*Some adjectives are compared irregularly as good, better, best.*

|        |        |       |  |      |         |          |
|--------|--------|-------|--|------|---------|----------|
| good   | better | best  |  | much | more    | most     |
| well   | better | best  |  | many | more    | most     |
| bad    | worse  | worst |  | late | later   | last     |
| evil   | worse  | worst |  | far  | farther | farthest |
| little | less   | least |  |      |         |          |

## EXERCISES.

A good boy, a better boy, the best boy.

a bad boy, a worse boy, the worst boy.

an evil action, a worse action, the worst action.

a little girl, a less girl, the least girl.

much hay, more hay, the most hay.

many nuts, more nuts, the most nuts.

a far country, a farther country, the farthest country.

I have a good pen, James has a better pen, but John has the best pen.

I have a good pen, James has a better but John has the best.

John's writing is good, David's writing is better, but Ann's writing is the best.

John's writing is good, David's is better, but Ann's is the best.

James had an evil companion, Henry had a worse companion, but John had the worst companion.

Last May we had many fowls, last July we had more, now we have the most.

Mr —— has much money, Mr —— has more, but Mr —— has the most.

John has many marbles, Joseph has more, but William has the most.

Harriet is a little child, Charles is a less child, but Penelope is the least child.

Harriet is little, Charles is less, but Penelope is the least.

Arabia is a far country, India is a farther country, but Australia is the farthest.

CLASS. VI.—*Adjectives of more than one syllable are generally compared by prefixing more, and most ; or less, and least,*

|              |             |              |            |           |
|--------------|-------------|--------------|------------|-----------|
| tired        | peevish     | sorry        | covetous   | studious  |
| diligent     | patient     | pleased      | stingy     | abundant  |
| poorly       | impatient   | displeased   | pleasant   | numerous  |
| hungry       | attentive   | goodnatured  | unpleasant | different |
| thirsty      | negligent   | illnatured   | uneven     | unequal   |
| stupid       | mischievous | goodtempered | crooked    | sinful    |
| foolish      | troublesome | illtempered  | cloudy     | unclean   |
| cunning      | comfortable | handsome     | dusty      | stubborn  |
| careful      | timid       | quarrelsome  | frosty     | unjust    |
| careless     | obliging    | fretful      | slippery   | inclined  |
| slovenly     | vulgar      | innocent     | sultry     | roasted   |
| contented    | genteel     | virtuous     | cheerful   | fried     |
| discontented | temperate   | vicious      | mournful   | affable   |
| obstinate    | moderate    | impudent     | sorrowful  | valuable  |
| obedient     | cowardly    | saucy        | playful    | subtile   |
| disobedient  | savage      | violent      | slothful   | artful    |
| generous     | clumsy      | active       | level      | learned   |
| selfish      | awkward     | passionate   | solitary   | unlearned |
| spiteful     | bashful     | malicious    | aged       | prudent   |
| vexed        | modest      | revengeful   | ancient    | distant   |
| curious      | harmless    | disgraceful  | ashamed    | fearful   |

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

|            |           |            |             |            |
|------------|-----------|------------|-------------|------------|
| fertile    | misty     | useful     | public      | melancholy |
| fruitful   | oblong    | suspicious | industrious | agreeable  |
| liberal    | willing   | dishonest  | envious     | cautious   |
| beautiful  | unwilling | ignorant   | sincere     | yielding   |
| unhandsome | restless  | amiable    | seasonable  | pious      |
| painful    | torn      | brittle    | boiled      | impious    |
| unwell     | ragged    | forgetful  | serious     | weary      |
| terrible   | shocking  | deceitful  | loving      | delightful |
| indolent   | shameful  | sacred     | jealous     | flexible   |
| unripe     | sensible  | difficult  | faithful    | drinking   |

## EXERCISES.

An illnated boy, a more illnated boy, the most illnated boy.  
 a distant country, a more distant country, the most distant country.  
 a flexible stick, a more flexible stick, the most flexible stick.  
 a valuable watch, a more valuable watch, the most valuable watch.  
 a passionate man, a more passionate man, the most passionate man.  
 a comfortable cloak, a more comfortable cloak, the most comfortable cloak.  
 a patient man, a more patient man, the most patient man.  
 a disobedient boy, a more disobedient boy, the most disobedient boy.  
 a saucy girl, a more saucy girl, the most saucy girl.  
 a foolish boy, a more foolish boy, the most foolish boy.  
 a slovenly girl, a more slovenly girl, the most slovenly girl.  
 a beautiful bird, a more beautiful bird, the most beautiful bird.  
 a thirsty boy, a more thirsty boy, the most thirsty boy.  
 a stupid man, a more stupid man, the most stupid man.  
 a crooked stick, a more crooked stick, the most crooked stick.  
 a careful woman, a more careful woman, the most careful woman.  
 a fruitful tree, a more fruitful tree, the most fruitful tree.  
 an impious man, a more impious man, the most impious man.  
 a slippery path, a more slippery path, the most slippery path.  
 a faithful servant, a more faithful servant, the most faithful servant.  
 an abundant harvest, a more abundant harvest, the most abundant harvest.  
 a difficult lesson, a more difficult lesson, the most difficult lesson.  
 a pleasant country, a more pleasant country, the most pleasant country.  
 a harmless reptile, a more harmless reptile, the most harmless reptile.  
 a terrible storm, a more terrible storm, the most terrible storm.

The Greeks were an ancient people, the Egyptians a more ancient people, but the Chaldeans were the most ancient people.

Ananias was a cunning man, Gehazi was a more cunning man, but Elymas was the most cunning man.

Abraham was a contented man, Isaac was a more contented man, but Job was the most contented man.

A wolf is an obstinate beast, an ass is a more obstinate beast, but a mule is the most obstinate beast.

Esau was vexed, Cain was more vexed, but the Jews were the most vexed.

A watch is a curious thing, a ship is a more curious thing, but a locomotive engine is the most curious thing.

A cock has handsome plumage, a peacock has more handsome plumage, but a hummingbird has the most handsome plumage.

Saul was an impatient man, Ahab was a more impatient man, but Goliath was the most impatient man.

COMPARISON. (*CONTINUED.*)

A sparrow is a mischievous animal, a fox is a more mischievous animal, but a rat is the most mischievous animal.

An ewe is timid, a hen is more timid, but a hare is the most timid.

Spain is a temperate country, France is a more temperate country, but England is the most temperate country.

—— is a prudent man, —— is a more prudent man, but —— is the most prudent man.

His dream was fearful, her dream was more fearful, but your dream was the most fearful.

He had some fertile land, you had more fertile land, but they had the most fertile land.

Our apple-trees were fruitful, your apple-trees were more fruitful, but their apple-trees were the most fruitful.

——'s head was painful, ——'s neck was more painful, but ——'s eyes were the most painful.

A wolf is a terrible animal, a tiger is a more terrible animal, but a lion is the most terrible animal.

His pear was unripe, your apple was more unripe, but my plum was the most unripe.

I had a rusty nail, he had a more rusty nail, but you had the most rusty nail.

J. H. had an oblong board, J. S. had a more oblong board, but S. F. had the most oblong board.

You are willing, she is more willing, but he is the most willing.

——'s clothes are torn, ——'s clothes are more torn, but ——'s are the most torn.

—— is an awkward girl, —— is a more awkward girl, but —— is the most awkward girl.

Miss S. is a bashful lady, Miss P. is a more bashful lady, but Miss J. is the most bashful lady.

H. B. is an innocent child, C. B. is a more innocent child, but P. B. is the most innocent child.

Abel was a righteous man, Moses was a more righteous man, but Enoch was the most righteous man.

A terrier is a vicious dog, a mastiff is a more vicious dog, but a bull-dog is the most vicious dog.

J. A. is an impudent boy, T. F. is a more impudent boy, but L. M. is the most impudent boy.

This boy had a violent fever, that boy had a more violent fever, but yon boy had the most violent fever.

—— is an active man, —— is a more active man, but —— is the most active man.

J. S. is a passionate boy, J. C. is a more passionate boy, but B. D. is the most passionate boy.

The sting of a viper is venomous, that of an asp is more venomous, but that of a rattlesnake is the most venomous.

Willow is flexible, cane is more flexible, but whalebone is the most flexible.

The boys were weary last night, the carpenter was more weary, but the gardener was the most weary.

Lot was selfish, Gehazi was more selfish, but Ahab was the most selfish.

Jacob was aged, Isaac was more aged, but Abraham was the most aged.

An ass is a stupid animal, a sheep is a more stupid animal, but a pig is the most stupid animal.

Iot was covetous, Gehazi was more covetous, but Ahab was the most covetous.

A foal is playful, a lamb is more playful, but a kitten is the most playful.

The vale of Sodom was fertile, the Promised Land was more fertile, but the Garden of Eden was the most fertile.

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

**CLASS VII.** *The comparative of superiority is formed by adding er or prefixing more to the adjective, and adding than after it ; as, God is wiser than man ; God is more wise than man. A rose is more beautiful than a daisy.*

## EXERCISES.

The sunflower is *taller than* the dahlia. Abel was a *better man than* Cain. Methuselah was *older than* Adam. Joseph was *more beloved than* his brothers. Jacob's children were *more numerous than* Isaac's. Joseph was *wiser than* Pharoah. Moses was *more learned than* his brethren. Pharoah's daughter was *kinder than* Pharoah. Paul was *bolder than* Peter. We are *nearer* the dining room *than* the bedrooms. A poplar is *more flexible than* an oak. The wood of the oak is *more durable than* that of the poplar. The roaring of the lion is *more terrible than* that of other beasts.

**CLASS VIII.** *The comparative of inferiority is formed by prefixing less to the adjective, and adding than after it, as, Man is less wise than God ; a daisy is less beautiful than a rose.*

## EXERCISES.

Peter was *less bold than* Paul. Isaac's children were *less numerous than* Jacob's. France is *less distant than* America. Canada is *less fertile than* Carolina. Poland is *less cold than* Siberia. The Shannon is *less winding than* the Trent. The Patriarchs were *less wise than* the Apostles. The sheep is *less sagacious than* the dog. The horse is *less valuable than* the cow. Brass is *less hard than* steel. The moon is *less bright than* the sun. Wood is *less porous than* sponge. A cart-horse is *less handsome than* a race-horse.

**CLASS IX.** *The comparative of equality is formed by placing as before the adjective, and as after it ; as, — is as tall as —.*

## EXERCISES.

A canary is *as small as* a sparrow. John is *as good as* William. Mary is *as attentive as* Jane. Plants are *as useful as* animals. Dogs are *as useful as* cats. Insects are *as beautiful as* flowers. The moon is *as round as* the sun. Wasps are *as industrious as* bees. Ants are *as provident as* bees. On the 22 nd. March, and on the 22 nd. September, the nights are *as long as* the days, and the days are *as long as* the nights. A pound of cherries is *as heavy as* a pound of lead. A quart of water is *as much as* a quart of milk. Snow is *as cold as* ice. Herod was *as wicked as* Pharoah.

\*\*\* *THAN follows the comparative when opposition is signified ; OF when selection is implied.*

The wolf and the lion are both savage animals ; the lion is the *more powerful* of the two.

The ant, bee and wasp are all industrious insects ; the ant is the *smallest* of them. Leather and bark are both tough, the former is the *tougher* of the two.

Jacob had twelve sons, Joseph was the *most beloved* of them, and Benjamin was the *youngest* of them

Moses, Elijah and Christ all worked miracles, those of the Saviour were the *most merciful* of them.

Moses and Joshua were both leaders of the Israelites, the former was the *more favoured* of the two.

John is *older than* James, but James is the *taller* of the two.

Mary is *more attentive than* Martha, but Martha is the *cleverer* of the two.

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

**GENERAL RULE.** *The Adjective is in the superlative degree when it expresses the quality in a very high, or in the highest state — hence there are two sorts of superlatives, the relative, and the absolute.*

**CLASS X —.** *The superlative relative is formed by adding est or prefixing most to express the highest state, and by prefixing least to express the lowest state ; as, the whale is the largest animal ; the dog is the most sagacious animal.*

## EXERCISES.

The Mississippi is the *longest* of rivers. The scorpion is the most *venomous* insect. Samson was the *strongest* man. Job was the *most patient* man. Methuselah was the *oldest* man. Moses was the  *meekest* man. God is the most *powerful* Being. Silver is one of the *most valuable* metals. Diamond is the most *precious* stone. Bread is the *most nutritious* food. The elephant is the *largest* quadruped. The cow is the *most useful* quadruped. The mountains are the *highest* parts of the earth. Heaven is the *holiest* place. Hell is the *most wicked* place. The camel is the *most patient* beast. The sun is the *most brilliant* object. The Bible is the *best* book. Geese have the *softest* down. Ostriches have the *most splendid* feathers. Dahlias have the *handsomest* blossoms. Pepper has a *most pungent* taste. Hops have a *most bitter* taste. Lemons have a *most acid* taste. The sea is the *most extensive* portion of the earth. The earth is not the *largest* of the planets. The mouse is the *least* of quadrupeds.

**CLASS XI —.** *The superlative absolute is formed by putting very before the adjective ; as, England is a very populous country.*

## EXERCISES.

Enoch was a *very good* man. Jacob had a *very numerous* family. Joseph was a *very wise* governor. Jezebel was a *very cruel* woman. Belshazzar was a *very impious* king. Daniel was a *very faithful* servant of God. Shadrach, Meshech and Abednego were *very good* men. Samuel was a *very obedient* child. Aaron had *very rebellious* sons. Saul was a *very foolish* king. The Israelites were *very disobedient* to God. Paul was a *very faithful* preacher of the Gospel. Judas Iscariot was a *very faithless* Apostle.

**CLASS XII.** *The following adjectives are generally used only in the Positive degree though some of them may be compared.*

|            |           |           |             |           |           |
|------------|-----------|-----------|-------------|-----------|-----------|
| alive      | English   | unequal   | dishonest   | mute      | single    |
| dead       | Scotch    | masculine | mortal      | only      | solid     |
| living     | Irish     | feminine  | immortal    | round     | hollow    |
| all        | chief     | neuter    | just        | square    | spiritual |
| some       | correct   | full      | unjust      | oval      | material  |
| artificial | incorrect | empty     | like        | perfect   | straight  |
| natural    | same      | first     | unlike      | imperfect | false     |
| awake      | different | second    | male        | singular  | true      |
| asleep     | divine    | third     | female      | plural    | visible   |
| bald       | human     | last      | married     | principal | invisible |
| deaf       | almighty  | present   | unmarried   | raw       | animal    |
| dumb       | wet       | past      | middle-aged | ripe      | double    |
| blind      | dry       | future    | moral       | sacred    | vegetable |
| British    | equal     | honest    | immoral     | silent    | mineral   |

## COMPARISON (CONTINUED.)

## EXERCISES.

- My father is *alive*, but my mother is *dead*.  
 I have some *living* birds in a large cage.  
*All* men are not tall, *some* men are tall.  
 Some men have *artificial* legs, but we have *natural* legs.  
*Natural* flowers are prettier than *artificial* flowers.  
 You are *awake* in the schoolroom. The babe is *asleep* in the cradle.  
 Some old men are *bald*, but all old men are not *bald*.  
 You are *deaf* and *dumb*, but you are not *blind*.  
*English* horses are swift, *British* sailors are brave men.  
*Irish* linen is good, *Scotch* gingham is very strong.  
 — is the *chief* boy in his class.  
 Some of your lessons are *correct*, others are *incorrect*.  
 Your faces are not all the *same*, they are *different*.  
 God is a *divine* person. We are *human*.  
 Christ was *divine* and *human*.  
 The almighty God is holy, *just*, & good.  
 A *wet* sponge is heavy, a *dry* sponge is light.  
 My two arms are *equal*, yours and mine are *unequal*.  
 Boy is *masculine*, girl is *feminine*, and chair is *neuter*.  
 Horse is *masculine*, mare is *feminine*, and coach is *neuter*.  
 The pocket of my vest is *full*. The pocket of my vest is *empty*. An egg is *full*. The shell is *empty*.  
 The *first* man was Adam, the *second* man was Cain, and the *third* man was Abel.  
 The *first* book is thick, the *second* book is thin, the *third*, and the *last* book is large.  
 Today is *present*, yesterday is *past*, tomorrow is *future*.  
 Caleb was *honest*, Achan was *dishonest*.  
 Our bodies are *mortal*, but our souls are *immortal*.  
 Angels are *immortal*, God is *immortal*.  
 Simeon was a *just* man, but Pilate was an *unjust* man. God is *just*.  
 The moon is *like* the sun, a cat is *like* a tiger, an ostrich is *like* a cameleopard, a mouse is *unlike* a fish, the sun is *unlike* a cat.
- Bull is *male*, cow is *female*, all animals are *male* or *female*.  
 — is a *married* man, — is a *married* woman.  
 — is an *unmarried* man, — is an *unmarried* woman.  
 I have a *married* brother, I have an *unmarried* sister.  
 I am not a *young* man, I am not an *old* man, I am a *middle-aged* man.  
 All good men are *moral* men. Liars are *immoral* men.  
 You have *no* speech, you are *mute* children.  
 You are not *naked*, you are *clothed*; some savages are *naked*.  
 Christ is God's *only* son.  
 A shilling is *round*, an egg is *oval*, and this book is *square*.  
 I have *perfect* senses, you have *imperfect* senses.  
 God is *perfect*, no man is *perfect*.  
 Book is *singular*, books is *plural*.  
 Mr — is the *principal* teacher.  
 This is a *raw* potato.  
 This is my *right* hand, and that is my *left* hand.  
*Ripe* fruit is good, *unripe* fruit is bad.  
 The bible is a *sacred* book.  
 The young pupils are not *silent* in school.  
 An *unmarried* man is *single*, a *single* man is not *married*.  
 A marble is *solid* a humming-top is *hollow*.  
 God is *spiritual*. Christ is *spiritual*.  
 The Holy Ghost is *spiritual*.  
 Angels are *spiritual*, our souls are *spiritual*.  
 A stone is *material*, the sun is *material*, our bodies are *material*.  
 The grave is a *still* place, the ruler is *straight*.  
 Some men have *false* legs, this is a *true* leg.  
 The wind is *invisible*, God is an *invisible* Being.  
 A horse is *visible*, a tree is *visible*, we are *visible*.  
 Horns quills and tallow are *animal* substances.  
 Linen and cotton are *vegetable* substances.  
 Iron, clay, & sand are *mineral* substances.  
 — 's gun has a *double* barrel.  
 Strong winter shoes have thick upper-leathers, and *double* soles.



## IRREGULAR COMPARISONS.

*Many of the irregular adjectives here exemplified are in common use as nouns, adverbs, or prepositions.*

*The following have more than one superlative.*

| POSITIVE | COMPARATIVE     | SUPERLATIVE                        |
|----------|-----------------|------------------------------------|
| Far      | Farther         | Farthest, farmost, or furthestmost |
| Near     | Nearer          | Nearest or next                    |
| Fore     | Former          | Foremost or first                  |
| Hind     | Hinder          | Hindmost or hindermost             |
| In       | Inner           | Inmost or innermost                |
| Up       | Upper           | Upmost or uppermost                |
| Low      | Lower           | Lowest, or lowermost               |
| Late     | Later or latter | Latest or last                     |
| Out      | Outer           | Outermost                          |

EXAMPLES.— The chin is near the nose. The lower lip is nearer the nose than the chin. The upper lip is nearest the nose. The upper lip is next the nose.

A giraffe has four legs. The fore ones are longer than the hind ones. — and — are tall boys, but the former boy is stronger than the latter. Four horses are in that coach, the foremost horses are grey. Six boys are at this desk. The first boy has a slate in his hand.

The hind legs of a kangaroo are very long, the fore ones are very short. Three houses are behind the church, the hinder is larger than the hindmost. The hindmost house is the smallest.

Albumen and yolk are in an egg. The albumen is the inner part, and the yolk is the inmost part. The innermost part is yellow and the inner part is white. Paul and Silas were in the inner prison at Philippi.

This is not an upper room, this is a lower room. The lower rooms are the —, the —, the —, &c. The lowest room is the cellar.

*The following have no positive*

| POSITIVE | COMPARATIVE    | SUPERLATIVE           |
|----------|----------------|-----------------------|
|          | After          | Aftmost, aftermost    |
|          | Forth, further | Furthest, furthermost |
|          | Hither         | Hithermost            |
|          | Nether         | Nethermost            |
|          | Under          | Undermost             |
|          | Utter          | Uttermost             |

EXAMPLES.— Two greyhounds are after a hare, the after dog is near the hare, the aftermost dog is not near the hare.

A little boy, a little girl, and a big boy are far from me, the little boy is further from me than the girl, the big boy is furthest from me, he is the furthestmost boy.

Coal is in the nether part of the earth, The nethermost abyss is deep.

*The following have no Comparative.*

| POSITIVE           | COMPARATIVE | SUPERLATIVE         |
|--------------------|-------------|---------------------|
| Front              |             | Frontmost           |
| Rear               |             | Rearmost            |
| Head               |             | Headmost            |
| End                |             | Endmost             |
| Top                |             | Topmost             |
| Down               |             | Downmost            |
| Mid, middle, midst |             | Midmost, middlemost |
| North              |             | Northmost           |
| South              |             | Southmost           |
| Northern           |             | Northernmost        |
| Southern           |             | Southernmost        |
| Eastern            |             | Easternmost         |
| Western            |             | Westernmost         |

EXAMPLES.— Two gates are before the house. The frontmost one is stronger than the front one.

Two soldiers are in the rear of the army. The rear soldier is lame, but the rearmost is dying.

These are the head pupils. — is the headmost of the two.

The ship has two topsails. The small one is the topmost

The middle finger is the longest. Midsummer is very warm. The midmost boy in that class is idle. The middlemost girl in that class is busy.

## PROMISCUOUS EXERCISES ON COMPARISON.

Flies have six legs, but spiders have more legs than flies.

Mustard is pungent, but cayenne is very much more pungent than mustard.

Gin is as clear as water, but water is more useful than gin.

Gin is as clear as water, but water is the more useful of the two.

Joseph had much more wisdom than the magicians of Pharaoh.

Job had a numerous family, but Jacob had a more numerous family than Job.

David was much more obedient to God than Saul.

Jonathan was much more affectionate to David than Saul.

The death of the first born was the most dreadful of all the plagues of Egypt.

Abraham was older than Isaac, but he was not so old as Methuselah. Methuselah was very much older than Abraham.

Man is a powerful animal, horses are much more powerful, but Elephants are the most powerful of the three.

Bees are larger than flies, flies are larger than ants, and butterflies are larger than bees.

Birds are numerous, insects are more numerous than birds, but plants are more numerous than insects.

—— is an active boy, —— is more active than John, but —— is the most active of all the boys in the school.

Some of the boys are diligent, some of the girls are more diligent, but —— is the most diligent pupil in the school.

The earth is very large, the sun is much larger than the earth, but some of the stars are very much larger than the sun.

Paste, gum, isinglass, and glue are all sticky substances, the second is more sticky than the first, but the last is the most sticky of them all.

The bark of a tree is tough, Indian rubber is tougher than the bark of a tree, but leather is the toughest of them all.

Sparrows are common birds, rooks are less common than sparrows, but canaries are the least common of the three.

The garden is near the school, the playground is nearer the school than the garden is. Nine is very near ten, but two is not near ten, and five is not very near ten.

Ann is a weak girl, Mary is a weaker girl than Ann, Jane is as weak as Mary, Elizabeth is the weakest, she is very weak. The first is weak, and all the others are weak.

Cream is sweet, sugar is sweeter than cream, liquorice is as sweet as sugar, honey is the sweetest of all. Some apples are sweet, many are not.

October is a late month, November is a later month than October, December is the latest month. December is the last month of the year. Friday and Saturday are the latter days of the week; Saturday is the last day, it is a play-day; the former of the two is not a play-day.

The —— ern door of this house is open, and the —— ern door is shut. The easternmost country of Asia is Japan, and the westernmost is Turkey.

France is far from England, India is farther than France, China is the farthest from England. The furthestmost country of the earth from England is New Zealand.

Cornwall is the southernmost part of England, and Northumberland is the northernmost part of England. The southern part of Britain is warm, but the northern part is cold. —— was in the southernmost part of England, but he was never in the northernmost part. North Cape is the northernmost point in Europe.

## VERBS.

## THE VERB TO DO (TO ACT.)

*The Verb DO being prefixed to another verb serves to mark the action and time with greater energy ; as, " I do learn", " I did hear." It is also used in most negative and interrogative sentences ; as, " They do not hear," " Did you understand?" When DO is prefixed to certain nouns, such as fear, work, end, &c., the two words are considered as constituting a verb ; as, " I do love," " Thou didst fear," " He did work," &c. which signify the same as " I love," " Thou fearedst," " He worked."*

## PRESENT TIME.

## SINGULAR.

## PLURAL.

| <i>Affirmatively.</i> | <i>Negatively.</i> | <i>Affirmatively.</i> | <i>Negatively.</i> |
|-----------------------|--------------------|-----------------------|--------------------|
| I do ...              | I do not ...       | We do ...             | We do not ..       |
| Thou dost ...         | Thou dost not ...  | You do ...            | You do not ...     |
| He does ...           | He does not ...    | They do ...           | They do not ...    |
| She does ...          | She does not ...   | They do ...           | They do not ...    |
| It does ...           | It does not ...    | They do . .           | They do not ...    |

## PAST TIME.

|                |                    |              |                  |
|----------------|--------------------|--------------|------------------|
| I did ...      | I did not ...      | We did ...   | We did not ...   |
| Thou didst ... | Thou didst not ... | You did ...  | You did not ...  |
| He did ...     | He did not ...     | They did ... | They did not ... |
| She did ...    | She did not ...    | They did ... | They did not ... |
| It did ...     | It did not ...     | They did ... | They did not ... |

## IMPERATIVE MOOD

\*\*\* *The Imperative Mood is that form of any verb which is used in commanding, exhorting, entreating, or permitting ; as, " Sit up, John," — " Be persuaded," — " Forgive us," — " Go in peace."*

*Those forms with let are not strictly the first and third persons imperative, they are elliptical expressions in which the second person is understood. " Let me be," signifies " Do thou, or do you let me be" ; and so in other cases.*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

## AFFIRMATIVELY.

## NEGATIVELY.

| SINGULAR.                  | PLURAL.                      |
|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| Let me read that book.     | Let us see your watch.       |
| Read a book.               | Mend your pens.              |
| Let John read this letter. | Let the boys clean the yard. |
| Let Mary read the letter.  | Let the girls sew samplers.  |
| Let the cat lap milk.      | Let the birds pick seed.     |

| SINGULAR.                           | PLURAL.                             |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Do not scratch the desk.            | Do not break your slates.           |
| Do not let James tear his cap.      | Do not let the horse kick you.      |
| Do not let Ann cut her finger.      | Do not let the birds pick the corn. |
| Do not let the bee sting the child. | Do not let the flies eat the sugar. |

## EXERCISES ON THE IMPERATIVE MOOD.

Make a shoe.  
 Make a pen.  
 Make a cap.  
 Make a ball.  
 Make a shirt.  
 Make porridge.  
 Make the bed.  
 Do not make a noise, boys.  
 Do not make a kite.  
 Bring a chair.  
 Bring two slates.  
 Bring a jug.  
 Bring a book, John.  
 Bring my hat.  
 Bring some coals.  
 Wash your face.  
 Wash the floor.  
 Do not wash the desks.  
 Mary, wash your hands.  
 John, wash your feet.  
 Do not wash the dishes, Ann.  
 Brush my coat.  
 Brush your clothes.  
 Brush your shoes.  
 Brush my hat.  
 Do not brush his jacket.  
 Do not brush my boots.  
 Take two pens, Robert.  
 Take a biscuit.  
 Take dinner.  
 Take that book.  
 Take this knife.  
 Do not take my slate.  
 Do not take these pence.  
 Do not take that money.  
 Shut that gate.  
 Shut your eyes, children.  
 Do not shut the window.  
 Open the door.  
 Open your mouth.  
 Do not open the box.  
 Clean your slate, Joseph.  
 Clean that plate.  
 Clean the house.  
 Clean these slates.  
 Pull a rope.  
 Pull that boy.  
 Do not pull my ears.  
 Do not pull the bell.  
 Sup broth.  
 Sup a plate of soup.  
 Do not sup porridge.  
 Eat a biscuit.  
 Eat an apple.  
 Eat a slice of bread.  
 Eat these potatoes.  
 Do not eat unripe fruit.  
 Do not eat a bitter orange.  
 Drink water.

Drink a jugful of milk.  
 Do not drink porter.  
 Mend the chair.  
 Mend my shoes.  
 Mend his jacket, tailor.  
 Mend the desk, carpenter.  
 Break his slate.  
 Break dishes.  
 Do not break this cup.  
 Do not break the window.  
 Do not break my pencil.  
 Catch a fly.  
 Catch a mouse.  
 Catch a bird.  
 Catch a hare.  
 Do not catch a butterfly.  
 Sweep the floor of the kitchen.  
 Sweep the court.  
 Sweep the stairs.  
 Strike the desk.  
 Strike a girl.  
 Strike him.  
 Do not strike James.  
 Do not strike me.  
 Do not strike her.  
 Push the door.  
 Push a chair.  
 Do not push him.  
 Draw a house.  
 Draw a horse.  
 Draw a picture.  
 Do not draw a bird.  
 Do not draw a man.  
 Draw a cart.  
 Draw this boy.  
 Do not draw that boy.  
 Do not draw that chair.  
 Carry three slates.  
 Carry a chair.  
 Carry John, James.  
 Do not carry a trunk.  
 Shoot some birds.  
 Shoot a hare.  
 Shoot a man.  
 Shoot four cows.  
 Kill a cow, butcher.  
 Kill two mice.  
 Do not kill a man.  
 Hit the window.  
 Do not hit the desk.  
 Do not hit me.  
 Hit a bird.  
 Slap a boy.  
 Do not slap her.  
 Boil potatoes.  
 Do not boil the beef.  
 Boil fish.  
 Roast beef, cook.  
 Roast a leg of mutton.

Roast a fowl.  
 Toast bread.  
 Toast cakes.  
 Do not toast the rolls.  
 Fry ham.  
 Carve beef.  
 Carve a flower.  
 Buy three biscuits.  
 Buy a ball.  
 Buy bread.  
 Buy new clothes.  
 Do not buy marbles.  
 Do not buy a pen-knife.  
 Sell milk.  
 Do not sell whisky.  
 Do not sell your hat.  
 Cast a stone.  
 Cast a ball.  
 Do not cast the sponge.  
 Cut this potato.  
 Cut this bread.  
 Cut a piece of wood.  
 Do not cut your finger.  
 Sew your shirts.  
 Sew a frock.  
 Bake bread.  
 Bake a biscuit.  
 Bake cakes.  
 Bake a pie, baker.  
 Tear your jacket.  
 Tear a piece of paper.  
 Do not tear this book.  
 Do not tear his napkin.  
 Lift the sponge.  
 Lift the form.  
 Lift a pin.  
 Do not lift a stone.  
 Hold a candlestick.  
 Hold the gentleman's horse.  
 Wipe your nose.  
 Wipe your mouth.  
 Do not wipe the table.  
 Smell a flower.  
 Smell a rose.  
 Swallow a pill.  
 Swallow food.  
 Do not swallow two peas.  
 Scrape a carrot.  
 Scrape your shoes.  
 Scrape a pig.  
 Do not scrape potatoes.  
 Shave your beard.  
 Shave her head.  
 Nip her arm.  
 Do not nip me.  
 Scratch your head.  
 Scratch yourself.  
 Squeeze an orange.  
 Squeeze the sponge.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD. (CONTINUED.)

|                           |                              |                              |
|---------------------------|------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Do not squeeze my head.   | Sharpen my knife.            | Undress yourselves.          |
| Grind my knife.           | Sharpen a pair of scissors.  | Comb your hair.              |
| Grind a pair of scissors. | Sharpen this razor.          | Comb the tail of a horse.    |
| Grind corn.               | Do not blunt my knife.       | Dry your hands.              |
| Shear sheep.              | Do not blunt the axe.        | Dry the dishes.              |
| Do not shear the lamb.    | Print a book.                | Dry the towels.              |
| Reap wheat.               | Print some pictures.         | Dry the clothes.             |
| Do not reap the oats.     | Print a circular.            | Obeys the master.            |
| Mow hay.                  | Lead a wild horse.           | Children, obey your parents. |
| Mow clover.               | Lead a blind man.            | Obeys me.                    |
| Beat a boy.               | Lead the dog.                | Obeys God.                   |
| Beat the carpet.          | Lead me.                     | Do not disobey your father.  |
| Do not beat a girl.       | Peel this orange.            | Do not disobey him.          |
| Hem a napkin.             | Peel the potatoes.           | Disobey nobody.              |
| Hem a pinafore.           | Peel two turnips.            | Do not dirty your hands.     |
| Darn a stocking.          | Skin four cows.              | Do not dirty the floor.      |
| Teach a boy.              | Skin some sheep.             | Do not dirty your shoes.     |
| Teach deaf children.      | Light the gas.               | Hear a noise.                |
| Milk the cows.            | Light a match.               | Hear a drum.                 |
| Milk a goat.              | Light a lamp.                | Hear thunder.                |
| Milk an ass.              | Do not light the candle.     | Taste your soup.             |
| Feed a babe.              | Pay four shillings.          | Taste sugar.                 |
| Feed the horse.           | Give a book.                 | Do not taste your soup.      |
| Feed the pig.             | Give twopence.               | Feel my pulse.               |
| Do not feed the dog.      | Scour the candlesticks.      | Feel his hand.               |
| Hang up the maps.         | Scour a poker.               | Feel in your pocket.         |
| Hang up your cap.         | Scrub the floor.             | Do not feel my head.         |
| Hang a robber.            | Do not scrub the desks.      | Love your parents            |
| Knit a pair of stockings. | Punish three boys.           | Love your brothers.          |
| Knit a cap.               | Do not punish that girl.     | Love your sister.            |
| Knit a purse.             | Do not punish me.            | Love God.                    |
| Stir the porridge.        | Do not punish her.           | Do not love sin.             |
| Stir the broth.           | Kiss a babe.                 | Pick a lock.                 |
| Do not steal a shilling.  | Kiss your hand.              | Do not pick your nose.       |
| Do not steal sugar.       | Do not kiss the dog.         | Do not pick your ear.        |
| Do not steal clothes.     | Tie your shoes.              | Scratch my face.             |
| Do not steal money.       | Tie her pinafore.            | Scratch John's hands.        |
| Plait his shirt.          | Loosen your neck cloth.      | Do not scratch your head.    |
| Plait this string.        | Do not loosen her frock.     | Bleed a man.                 |
| Plait a lady's collar.    | Do not loose the rope.       | Plough a field.              |
| Plait a whip.             | File the point of that nail. | Plough the ground.           |
| Fold the shirt.           | File a piece of iron.        | Sow corn.                    |
| Fold the bed-cover.       | File a lock.                 | Sow wheat.                   |
| Fold the table-cloth.     | Hew a large stone.           | Sow seeds.                   |
| Do not fold my letter.    | Weave a napkin.              | Plant cabbage.               |
| Write your name.          | Weave stockings.             | Plant trees.                 |
| Write a letter.           | Weave cloth.                 | Plant flowers.               |
| Write a word              | Drive a flock of sheep.      | Harrow a field.              |
| Read a letter.            | Drive many cows.             | Delve the garden.            |
| Read the bible.           | Drive a horse.               | Do not delve the playground. |
| Build a large house.      | Borrow a knife.              | Rake the garden.             |
| Build a high wall.        | Borrow a shilling.           | Rake the walks.              |
| Build a church.           | Borrow sixpence.             | Dig a grave.                 |
| Drown a dog.              | Do not borrow money.         | Do not dig a hole.           |
| Drown four kittens.       | Shake a carpet.              | Slay a man.                  |
| Do not drown yourself.    | Shake the table cloth.       | Slay many soldiers.          |
| Do not lick your fingers. | Shake hands                  | Do not murder a child.       |
| Do not lick a spoon.      | Shake your heads.            | Slay a sheep.                |
| Get a spade.              | Dress the babe.              | Do not stab a man.           |
| Get wisdom.               | Dress yourself.              | Tuck her frock.              |
| Get understanding.        | Undress the children.        | Tuck my pinafore.            |

## IMPERATIVE MOOD. (CONTINUED.)

Stitch the collar of a shirt.  
 Stitch a wrist band.  
 Spell a word.  
 Spell my name.  
 Ask bread.  
 Ask a question.  
 Do not ask him.  
 Call the servant.  
 Do not call James.  
 Tell the master.  
 Tell your father.  
 Do not tell lies.  
 Show your hands.  
 Rig a ship.  
 Rig a sloop.  
 Paste these torn leaves.  
 Paste these pictures.  
 Shape her frock.  
 Shape a coat.  
 Collect the pencils.  
 Collect money.  
 Gather stones.  
 Gather shells.  
 Infuse the tea.  
 Infuse senna.  
 Bury the dead dog.  
 Bury a man.  
 Watch the clothes.  
 Count the pencil-cases.  
 Count the plates.  
 Count the windows.  
 Do not count the pens.  
 Turn your slates.  
 Turn yourself.  
 Do not turn your shirt.  
 Wring the clothes.  
 Wring the blankets.  
 Remember your lesson.  
 Remember my name.  
 Remember thy Creator.  
 Enter your father's house.  
 Enter the schoolroom.  
 Enter a church.  
 Do not enter the stable.  
 Bleach cloth.  
 Bleach the shirts.  
 Bleach linen.  
 Fasten the door.  
 Fasten the window.  
 Join two pieces of wood.  
 Drag the boat.  
 Drag a dead horse.  
 Do not haul a boat.  
 Offer a book.  
 Offer two shillings.  
 Do not destroy a book.  
 Do not destroy the flowers.  
 Repair the kitchen-door.  
 Repair the school-door.

Repair the house.  
 Do not lash a horse.  
 Do not lash a slave.  
 Lash a bad boy.  
 Save your money.  
 Save his money.  
 Level the garden.  
 Level the play-ground.  
 Level the road.  
 Do not waste food.  
 Stew apples.  
 Stew the beef.  
 Fetch coals.  
 Fetch a jug of water.  
 Do not fetch a chair.  
 Place the books.  
 Place the napkins.  
 Place the plates.  
 Lay the table-cloth.  
 Lay the carpet.  
 Lay the spoons.  
 Find a shilling.  
 Find my knife.  
 Do not lose your gloves.  
 Do not lose an umbrella.  
 Do not lose money.  
 Keep the book.  
 Keep a horse.  
 Keep four apples.  
 Do not keep rabbits.  
 Throw a ball.  
 Do not throw a stone.  
 Cast a sponge.  
 Cast a snow ball.  
 Cast a piece of wood.  
 Rub your hands.  
 Rub the stick.  
 Rub his sore foot.  
 Rub the chair.  
 Do not stain the desk.  
 Do not stain his jacket.  
 Do not stain her frock.  
 Hate sin.  
 Hate nobody.  
 Bruise an apple.  
 Do not bruise his foot.  
 Crush a piece of chalk.  
 Do not crush my arm.  
 Slaughter two cows.  
 Slaughter vermin.  
 Stick this cow.  
 Stick a sheep.  
 Do not wound a man.  
 Do not wound a soldier.  
 Wound his arm.  
 Wound that bird.  
 Strangle a cat.  
 Do not strangle a woman.  
 Suffocate bees.

Do not smother a babe.  
 Smother kittens.  
 Choke a man.  
 Educate a deaf boy.  
 Educate two blind girls.  
 Instruct children.  
 Instruct some boys.  
 Instruct a man.  
 Pass the dog.  
 Pass a church.  
 Pass his father.  
 Marry a lady.  
 Marry a woman.  
 Learn a lesson.  
 Learn geography.  
 Learn arithmetic.  
 Mind your lesson.  
 Mind my word.  
 Mix milk and water.  
 Do not mix the peas and pencils.  
 Say No.  
 Say Yes.  
 Say something.  
 Say nothing.  
 Say James.  
 Plunder a house.  
 Plunder a city.  
 Tear a piece of cloth.  
 Do not tear his jacket.  
 Pour tea.  
 Pour coffee.  
 Do not pour milk.  
 Twist that rope.  
 Do not twist his arm.  
 Wind yarn.  
 Wind up the clock.  
 Wind up my watch.  
 Do not kick the dog.  
 Do not kick the door.  
 Do not kick my leg.  
 Thank the master.  
 Thank the lady.  
 Thank your mother.  
 Thank me.  
 Spin wool.  
 Spin some tow.  
 Curl your hair.  
 Curl a wig.  
 Pierce her ears.  
 Pierce four holes.  
 Pierce the desk.  
 Place these pictures.  
 Place the desk.  
 Glue the arm of the chair.  
 Glue two pieces of wood.  
 Separate bad boys.  
 Separate the desks.  
 Pardon me.  
 Do not pardon that boy.

# IMPERATIVE MOOD. (CONTINUED)

Forgive me and John.  
 Correct my letter.  
 Correct the children.  
 Do not correct Mary's lesson.  
 Gild a picture frame.  
 Gild a sign board.  
 Engrave my name.  
 Engrave a picture.  
 Envy nobody.  
 Divide the apple.  
 Divide the potatoes.  
 Halve a sixpence.  
 Halve an orange.  
 Halve this apple.  
 Quarter a loaf.  
 Quarter a sheep.  
 Flatter nobody.  
 Do not flatter James.  
 Praise Robert.  
 Praise the Lord.  
 Praise God.  
 Honour the Lord.  
 Honour good men.  
 Worship Jesus.  
 Glean wheat.  
 Distribute these books.  
 Distribute these pears.  
 Distribute money.  
 Scatter the pens.  
 Scatter seeds.  
 Stretch your napkin.  
 Stretch your arm.  
 Stretch the canvass.  
 Do not sit, Mary.  
 Stop that boy.  
 Stop the thief.  
 Do not stop the water.  
 Do not hinder, Mary.  
 Hinder him.  
 Melt lead.  
 Melt some snow.  
 Do not melt the candle.  
 Dissolve sugar.  
 Dissolve salts.  
 Owe money.  
 Owe nothing.  
 Question a child.  
 Question a boy.  
 Question me.  
 Answer a question.  
 Answer the master.  
 Answer that lady.  
 Answer me.  
 Inter a dead man.  
 Inter a woman.  
 Bury a dead horse.  
 Call the servant.  
 Call that man.  
 Do not call the master.

Name a dog.  
 Name a town.  
 Name a ship.  
 Split matches.  
 Split a piece of wood.  
 Do not split the door.  
 Crack the window.  
 Do not crack a bowl.  
 Pluck flowers.  
 Do not pluck currants.  
 Do not pluck feathers.  
 Weigh sugar.  
 Weigh tea.  
 Weigh a cart.  
 Weigh yourself.  
 Measure the desk.  
 Measure my foot.  
 Do not measure him.  
 Brew ale.  
 Brew porter.  
 Brew beer.  
 Distil whisky.  
 Distil spirits.  
 Plaster a house.  
 Plaster a wall.  
 Plaster the hole.  
 Hoist a flag.  
 Hoist the sails.  
 Wear black clothes.  
 Wear a white frock.  
 Do not wear a red coat.  
 Do not wear a gold chain.  
 Admire a pretty picture.  
 Admire his writing.  
 Refuse a six pence.  
 Do not refuse a piece of bread.  
 Do not refuse that book.  
 Stroke the cat.  
 Stroke the dog's back.  
 Do not stroke my head.  
 Scold the servant.  
 Scold the cook.  
 Scold that lazy boy.  
 Burst the paper-bag.  
 Do not burst the bladder.  
 Stuff a chair-bottom.  
 Stuff a sofa.  
 Stuff the dead birds.  
 Empty the basin.  
 Empty the press.  
 Empty your pockets.  
 Do not empty the bottle.  
 Fill the pitcher.  
 Fill your pockets.  
 Do not fill a bowl.  
 Do not fill the glass.  
 Tease the dog.  
 Do not tease the child.  
 Tease nobody.

Please a babe.  
 Please the children.  
 Annoy James.  
 Annoy nobody.  
 Do not annoy an old woman.  
 Do not annoy the dog.  
 Polish the table.  
 Polish my shoes.  
 Clothe the poor beggar.  
 Clothe your child.  
 Support your old father.  
 Support yourself.  
 Dip your napkin.  
 Dip your finger.  
 Believe me.  
 Believe your father.  
 Believe Jesus Christ.  
 Do not believe James.  
 Do not believe Robert.  
 Bless God.  
 Curse nobody.  
 Choose a pretty book.  
 Choose a new frock.  
 Do not choose green clothes.  
 Bind the book.  
 Bind a shoe.  
 Bind her shawl.  
 Paint the door.  
 Paint a sign board.  
 Do not paint the desk.  
 Do not paint the railing.  
 Point the pencils.  
 Point a stick.  
 Command soldiers.  
 Command a servant.  
 Bring a slate and pencil.  
 Bring my hat and umbrella.  
 Wash two shirts and three frocks.  
 Brush my boots and shoes.  
 Brush Robert's jacket and John's trowsers.  
 Take a shilling and two pence.  
 Clean the desks and the floor.  
 Do not pull my hair, and Mary's ears.  
 Eat two apples, three pears, and six plums.  
 Eat bread and cheese.  
 Drink a tumbler o' water, and a glass of wine.  
 Mend the table, and the chair.  
 Break two cups, two saucers, and one plate.  
 Catch seven flies, and three butterflies.  
 Sweep the school-floor and lobby.

## IMPERATIVE MOOD. (CONTINUED)

|                                                          |                                                     |                                                   |
|----------------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------------|
| Do not strike John and me.                               | Skin a cow and a sheep, and tar lambs.              | Sweep the floor, and wipe the desks.              |
| Draw a horse, a man, and a dog.                          | Give me a book, a knife, and a pencil.              | Eat a slice of bread, and drink a jug of milk.    |
| Carry two boys and one girl.                             | Dry your hands, and feet.                           | Hem the napkin, and darn the stockings.           |
| Carry eight slates, and five books.                      | See the sun, moon, and stars.                       | Wash the dishes, and dry them.                    |
| Shoot three hares, and one rabbit.                       | See four ladies, and two gentlemen.                 | Kill a cow, and skin it.                          |
| Do not kill six sheep, and two cows.                     | Love your parents, brothers, and sisters.           | Buy some apples, and eat them.                    |
| Do not slap us and them.                                 | Love, honour and obey your parents.                 | Buy some books, and read them.                    |
| Boil potatoes and herrings.                              | Fear God and keep his commandments.                 | Do not shoot the birds, but shoot the rats.       |
| Buy a pound of tea, two pounds of sugar, and two loaves. | Plant twelve trees, eight shrubs, and many flowers. | Do not buy apples, but buy a knife.               |
| Cast a stone, a sponge, and a ball.                      | Count the pencils, pens, and slates.                | Do not teach that boy, but teach that girl.       |
| Lift the sponge, and pencils.                            | Correct our letters, others.                        | Wash your hands, but do not wash your feet.       |
| Do not steal money.                                      | Weigh tea, sugar, and meal.                         | Take this apple, but do not take that orange.     |
| Do not steal a coat, a hat, and a pair of shoes.         | Measure my foot and John's.                         | Mend John's jacket, but do not mend his trowsers. |
| Write your name and mine.                                | Wear a black coat and white trowsers.               | Do not look at the pictures, but read the book.   |
| Build a church, and a stable.                            | Paint the walls, doors, and windows.                |                                                   |
| Do not drown the cats and the kittens.                   | Wash your hands, and brush your clothes.            |                                                   |
| Peel a tub of potatoes, and six turnips.                 |                                                     |                                                   |

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

### AFFIRMATIVELY.

| SINGULAR.               | PLURAL.                  |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| Let me walk.            | Let us pray.             |
| Run, do run.            | Leap, do leap.           |
| Let the gentleman come. | Let the shoemakers work. |
| Let the lady go.        | Let the servant sing.    |
| Let the book fall.      | Let the birds fly.       |

### NEGATIVELY.

| SINGULAR.                      | PLURAL.                             |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Do not let me fall.            | Do not let us tumble.               |
| Do not rise.                   | Do not kneel.                       |
| Do not let the gardener smoke. | Do not let James and Alfred speak.  |
| Do not let Helen speak.        | Do not let Catherine and Mary skip. |
| Do not let the gas burn.       | Do not let the flowers wither.      |

James, be quiet.

Be honest.

Be careful.

Be industrious.

Be diligent.

Be obedient.

Be attentive, Ann.

Be humble.

Be kind.

William, do not be idle.

Do not be careless, Jane.

Do not be angry.

Do not be greedy.

Andrew, do not be selfish.

Do not be lazy.

Do not be conceited,

John, do not be obstinate.

Be steady, George.

Be cautious, Daniel.

Come to me.

Come with me.

Do not come with me.

Come with James.

Come with a staff.

Come with your cap.

Come off the desk.

Come into school.

Do not come into school.

Come into the boat.

Come out of the kitchen.

Come out of the garden.

Do not come near the fire.

Do not come through the hedge.

Do not come after me.

Come after me, Peter

Go to the door.

Go to the fire.

Go to bed.

Go from me.

Go off the form.

Go into the play-ground

Do not go into the garden.

Do not go into the parlour.

Go out of the kitchen

Sort your papers, Thomas.

Go with your brother.

Go without your cap.

Go about the garden.

Go for a chair.

Go for the maid.



# IMPERATIVE MOOD. (CONTINUED)

|                            |                            |                            |
|----------------------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|
| Go before me.              | Jump to the door.          | Dive in the sea.           |
| Go after me.               | Do not dance in school.    | Wade in the river.         |
| Go beyond the desk.        | Dance in the lobby.        | Wade across the river'.    |
| Stand in the play ground.  | Dance with Mary.           | Wade near a bridge.        |
| Stand at the fire.         | Play in the play-ground.   | Bathe in the sea.          |
| Do not stand on the form.  | Do not play in school.     | Do not bathe in warm water |
| Stand at the door.         | Do not play on the green.  | Bathe in cold water.       |
| Do not stand before me.    | Play with the boys.        | Bathe with your brother.   |
| Stand near the desk.       | Play before dinner.        | Bathe at B——.              |
| Stand before this chair.   | Play after dinner.         | Pray to God.               |
| Sit on that chair.         | Sleep in bed.              | Pray to Christ,            |
| Sit on this form.          | Do not sleep on the grass. | Pray every morning.        |
| Do not sit on the desk.    | Sleep in a barn.           | Pray every evening.        |
| Sit in a coach.            | Sleep with John.           | Look at the sun.           |
| Sit on a horse.            | Do not sleep without a     | Look at a picture.         |
| Sit next to Robert.        | night-cap.                 | Look on your book.         |
| Sit beside the master      | Sleep under the desk.      | Do not look off your book. |
| Sit between James and      | Sleep in the night-time.   | Look through the glass.    |
| John.                      | Live with your father.     | Do not look out of the     |
| Run to the gate,           | Live in England.           | window.                    |
| Run to the door.           | Live at ——.                | Do not look about the room |
| Run from the dog.          | Live at ——.                | Look in the press.         |
| Run into the play-ground.  | Live at home.              | Look behind the door.      |
| Run into the house.        | Do not laugh in school.    | Weep for your father.      |
| Do not run out of school.  | Laugh at the monkey.       | Do not weep in school.     |
| Do not run about the desk. | Laugh at him.              | Talk to your mother        |
| Run across a street.       | Do not laugh at me.        | Talk with a lady.          |
| Do not run through the     | Speak to the master.       | Talk to one another.       |
| hedge.                     | Speak with your tongue.    | Creep on the floor.        |
| Run for my cap.            | Do not speak with your     | Creep on the green.        |
| Run before the dog         | fingers.                   | Do not creep under the     |
| Do not run after a coach.  | Stop at the door.          | desk.                      |
| Run after your father.     | Stop here.                 | Do not lean on the desk.   |
| Walk to the desk.          | Stop at home.              | Lean on a staff.           |
| Walk from ——.              | Stop in the lobby.         | Do not lean against the    |
| Walk to town.              | Stop with that lady.       | wall.                      |
| Walk along the road.       | Lie on a sofa.             | Stay in school.            |
| Walk among corn.           | Do not lie on the floor.   | Stay with your parents.    |
| Do not walk in a field.    | Lie in bed.                | Stay at home.              |
| Walk with your sister.     | Rise off your seat.        | Stay beside the gate.      |
| Walk about the school-     | Rise out of bed.           | Tumble on the grass.       |
| room.                      | Work in the kitchen.       | Do not tumble among hay.   |
| Walk across the street.    | Work with your father.     | Agree with your sister.    |
| Ride on that pony.         | Work for Mr —.             | Agree with your friend.    |
| Do not ride on a dog       | Swim in the sea.           | Agree with John.           |
| Ride to ——.                | Swim to the shore.         | Do not quarrel with him    |
| Ride from home.            | Swim out of the water.     | Do not quarrel with James  |
| Ride along the road.       | Swim about a ship.         | Quarrel with nobody        |
| Jump over the form         | Swim a cross the river.    | Bow to the master          |
| Do not jump upon the desk. | Sail in a boat.            | Bow to that lady           |
| Jump off the desk.         | Sail in a steam boat.      | Bow at the door            |
| Do not jump on the green.  | Sail to America.           | Curtsey to the master      |
| Jump out of the water.     | Sail to Liverpool.         | Curtsey to the lady        |
| Jump after me.             | Sail on the sea.           | Curtsey beside the door    |
|                            | Sail across the river.     | Fish in the sea            |

# IMPERATIVE MOOD. [CONTINUED.]

|                                                     |                                               |                                                                                    |
|-----------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| Fish in a river.                                    | Come with me, and do not go with John.        | Do not speak to your master about James.                                           |
| Fish for trouts.                                    | Go from me to the door.                       | Speak to the master with your fingers                                              |
| Fish for cod.                                       | Do not go out of school into the play ground. | Stop at the door with your sister.                                                 |
| Fish with a line.                                   | Go with John to the garden.                   | Lie at the door.                                                                   |
| Fish with worms.                                    | Do not go to the parlour for a chair.         | Do not work with the servant in the kitchen.                                       |
| Fish at home.                                       | Go to the garden for a flower.                | Work for Mr. Simpson for money.                                                    |
| Do not slide on ice.                                | Go to the door with a book.                   | Sail in a steam-boat to Liverpool.                                                 |
| Slide on a pond.                                    | Go about the garden with James.               | Sail in a steam packet to America.                                                 |
| Do not slide on the play-ground.                    | Come home with your slate.                    | Sail in a ship.                                                                    |
| Slide during winter.                                | Come with me to town.                         | Sail on the sea in a boat.                                                         |
| Fall on the floor.                                  | Sit on a chair near the fire.                 | Dive in the sea for oysters.                                                       |
| Fall on the road.                                   | Sit on the form next to Robert.               | Bathe in the sea during summer.                                                    |
| Fall off the desk.                                  | Do not sit on the desk with James.            | Do not bathe in the sea during winter.                                             |
| Fall out of bed.                                    | Run from the door to the fire.                | Look at the sun, moon, and stars.                                                  |
| Fall into the sea.                                  | Do not run after butterflies in the garden.   | Look at the bird in a cage.                                                        |
| Fall through the window.                            | Run to the lobby for my cap.                  | Look at the pictures in the book.                                                  |
| Fall down the stairs.                               | Walk about the garden with your brother.      | Look in the parlour for a book.                                                    |
| Wait at the gate.                                   | Walk from the desk to the door.               | Fish in the sea for cod.                                                           |
| Wait at the door.                                   | Walk with your sister in the country.         | Fish in the rivers for trout.                                                      |
| Wait for me.                                        | Ride from here to —.                          | Beware of the dog.                                                                 |
| Do not wait in the kitchen.                         | Ride faster than the coach.                   | Beware of the well.                                                                |
| Do not wait with him.                               | Do not jump off the desk upon the form.       | Beware of bad companions                                                           |
| Do not fight with Robert.                           | Jump from me to the desk.                     | My son, keep my words, and lay up my commandments.                                 |
| Fight with no one.                                  | Do not jump over the wall into the garden.    | Incline thine ear to wisdom.                                                       |
| Fight in the garden.                                | Do not dance in school with Jane.             | Apply thy heart to understanding.                                                  |
| Do not fight in school.                             | Play at ball in the play ground.              | My son, forget not my law.                                                         |
| Wrestle with John.                                  | Do not play with the boys in the garden.      | Trust in the Lord with all thine heart.                                            |
| Wrestle with me.                                    | Sleep with Robert and John.                   | Be not wise in thine own eyes.                                                     |
|                                                     | Sleep in a barn among straw.                  | Enter not into the path of the wicked.                                             |
|                                                     | Live with your father in the country.         | Go to the ant thou sluggard, consider her ways, and be wise.                       |
|                                                     | Live at home during the vacation.             | My son, hear the instruction of thy father, and forsake not the law of thy mother. |
|                                                     | Speak to your mother with your tongue.        | Lean not unto thine own understanding.                                             |
| Come to me, and go to the door.                     |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Come from John, and go to Mary.                     |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Go to the fire, and sit on a chair.                 |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Sit on the desk, and stand on the form.             |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Run in the playground, and walk in the garden.      |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Jump over the form, and run to the door.            |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Play with the boys, and girls.                      |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Fish for trouts and eels.                           |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Bow to the gentlemen and ladies.                    |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Stand on the form, but do not stand on the table.   |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Do not sit on the desk, but sit on the form.        |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Walk in the garden but, do not pull the flowers.    |                                               |                                                                                    |
| Do not play in school, but play in the play ground. |                                               |                                                                                    |

# THE AUXILIARY VERBS.

TO BE (TO EXIST—EXISTENCE.)

## PRESENT TIME.

| SINGULAR       |             | PLURAL         |             |
|----------------|-------------|----------------|-------------|
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | NEGATIVELY. | AFFIRMATIVELY. | NEGATIVELY. |
| I am           | I am not    | We are         | We are not  |
| &c.            | &c.         | &c.            | &c.         |

## PAST TIME.

|       |           |         |             |
|-------|-----------|---------|-------------|
| I was | I was not | We were | We were not |
| &c.   | &c.       | &c.     | &c.         |

TO HAVE. (TO END, TO COMPLETE—ENDING, COMPLETION.)

## PRESENT TIME.

|        |            |         |             |
|--------|------------|---------|-------------|
| I have | I have not | We have | We have not |
| &c.    | &c.        | &c.     | &c.         |

## PAST TIME.

|       |           |        |            |
|-------|-----------|--------|------------|
| I had | I had not | We had | We had not |
| &c.   | &c.       | &c.    | &c.        |

TO DO. (TO ACT—DEED, ACTION)

## PRESENT TIME.

|      |          |       |           |
|------|----------|-------|-----------|
| I do | I do not | We do | We do not |
| &c.  | &c.      | &c.   | &c.       |

## PAST TIME.

|       |           |        |            |
|-------|-----------|--------|------------|
| I did | I did not | We did | We did not |
| &c.   | &c.       | &c.    | &c.        |

SHALL. (TO OWE.—DUTY OBLIGATION.)

## PRESENT TIME.

|            |                |            |                |
|------------|----------------|------------|----------------|
| I shall    | I shall not    | We shall   | We shall not   |
| Thou shalt | Thou shalt not | You shall  | You shall not  |
| He shall   | He shall not   | They shall | They shall not |
| She shall  | She shall not  | They shall | They shall not |
| It shall   | It shall not   | They shall | They shall not |

## PAST TIME.

|               |                   |             |                 |
|---------------|-------------------|-------------|-----------------|
| I should      | I should not      | We should   | We should not   |
| Thou shouldst | Thou shouldst not | You should  | You should not  |
| He should     | He should not     | They should | They should not |
| She should    | She should not    | They should | They should not |
| It should     | It should not     | They should | They should not |

WILL. (TO RESOLVE, TO DETERMINE, TO INTEND—RESOLUTION, DETERMINATION, INTENTION.)

|           |               |           |               |
|-----------|---------------|-----------|---------------|
| I will    | I will not    | We will   | We will not   |
| Thou wilt | Thou wilt not | You will  | You will not  |
| He will   | He will not   | They will | They will not |
| She will  | She will not  | They will | They will not |
| It will   | It will not   | They will | They will not |

## PAST TIME.

|              |                  |            |                |
|--------------|------------------|------------|----------------|
| I would      | I would not      | We would   | We would not   |
| Thou wouldst | Thou wouldst not | You would  | You would not  |
| He would     | He would not     | They would | They would not |
| She would    | She would not    | They would | They would not |
| It would     | It would not     | They would | They would not |

## AUXILIARY VERBS. [CONTINUED.]

MAY. (TO BE ABLE— LIBERTY, PERMISSION.)

## PRESENT TIME.

|            |                |          |              |
|------------|----------------|----------|--------------|
| I may      | I may not      | We may   | We may not   |
| Thou mayst | Thou mayst not | You may  | You may not  |
| He may     | He may not     | They may | They may not |
| She may    | She may not    | They may | They may not |
| It may     | It may not     | They may | They may not |

## PAST TIME.

|              |                  |            |                |
|--------------|------------------|------------|----------------|
| might        | I might not      | We might   | We might not   |
| Thou mightst | Thou mightst not | You might  | You might not  |
| He might     | He might not     | They might | They might not |
| She might    | She might not    | They might | They might not |
| It might     | It might not     | They might | They might not |

CAN. (TO BE ABLE, TO KNOW, POWER, ABILITY.)

## PRESENT TIME.

|            |                |          |              |
|------------|----------------|----------|--------------|
| I can      | I can not      | We can   | We can not   |
| Thou canst | Thou canst not | You can  | You can not  |
| He can     | He can not     | They can | They can not |
| She can    | She can not    | They can | They can not |
| It can     | It can not     | They can | They can not |

## PAST TIME.

|              |                  |            |                |
|--------------|------------------|------------|----------------|
| I could      | I could not      | We could   | We could not   |
| Thou couldst | Thou couldst not | You could  | You could not  |
| He could     | He could not     | They could | They could not |
| She could    | She could not    | They could | They could not |
| It could     | It could not     | They could | They could not |

OUGHT (TO OWE — DUTY OBLIGATION.)

|              |                  |            |                |
|--------------|------------------|------------|----------------|
| I ought      | I ought not      | We ought   | We ought not   |
| Thou oughtst | Thou oughtst not | You ought  | You ought not  |
| He ought     | He ought not     | They ought | They ought not |
| She ought    | She ought not    | They ought | They ought not |
| It ought     | It ought not     | They ought | They ought not |

MUST. (TO BE OBLIGED, OR NECESSITATED— OBLIGATION, NECESSITY.)

## PRESENT AND PAST TIME.

|           |               |           |               |
|-----------|---------------|-----------|---------------|
| I must    | I must not    | We must   | We must not   |
| Thou must | Thou must not | You must  | You must not  |
| He must   | He must not   | They must | They must not |
| She must  | She must not  | They must | They must not |
| It must   | It must not   | They must | They must not |

LET. (TO PERMIT— PERMISSION.)

## PRESENT AND PAST TIME.

|              |                  |          |              |
|--------------|------------------|----------|--------------|
| I let        | I let not        | We let   | We let not   |
| Thou lettest | Thou lettest not | You let  | You let not  |
| He lets      | He lets not      | They let | They let not |
| She lets     | She lets not     | They let | They let not |
| It lets      | It lets not      | They let | They let not |

\*\*\* *The formula of the verbs TO BE, TO HAVE, and TO DO, having been previously given it is unnecessary to repeat their variations in the different persons.*

# PRESENT TIME.

## SINGULAR

### SIMPLE FORM.

### PLURAL.

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

## NEGATIVELY.

I call Ann.  
Thou callest Ann.  
He calls Ann.  
She calls Ann.  
It calls Ann.

James calls me.

I am calling Ann.  
Thou art calling Ann.  
He is calling Ann.  
James is calling me.

I *do* call Ann.  
Thou *dost* call Ann.  
He *does* call Ann.  
James *does* call me.

Ann is called by me.  
Ann is called by thee.  
Ann is called by him.  
Ann is called by her.  
Ann is called by it.

I am called by James.

Ann is being called by me.  
Ann is being called by thee.  
Ann is being called by him.  
I am being called by James.

Ann is called by me.  
Ann is called by thee.  
Ann is called by him.  
I am called by James.

Ruth is not called by me.  
Ruth is not called by thee.  
Ruth is not called by him.  
I am not called by Ruth.

Ruth is not being called by me.  
Ruth is not being called by thee.  
Ruth is not being called by him.  
I am not being called by Ruth.

Ruth *is not* called by me.  
Ruth *is not* called by thee.  
Ruth *is not* called by him.  
I *am not* called by Ruth.

We call Ann.  
You call Ann.  
They call Ann.  
They call Ann.  
They call Ann.  
James calls us.

We are calling Ann.  
You are calling Ann.  
They are calling Ann.  
James is calling us.

We *do* call Ann.  
You *do* call Ann.  
They *do* call Ann.  
James *does* call us.

We call not Ruth.  
You call not Ruth.  
They call not Ruth.  
Ruth calls not us.

We are not calling Ruth.  
You are not calling Ruth.  
They are not calling Ruth.  
Ruth is not calling us.

We *do not* call Ruth.  
You *do not* call Ruth.  
They *do not* call Ruth.  
Ruth *does not* call us.

Ann is called by us.  
Ann is called by you.  
Ann is called by them.  
Ann is called by them.  
Ann is called by them.  
We are called by James.

Ann is being called by us.  
Ann is being called by you.  
Ann is being called by them.  
We are being called by James.

Ann is called by us.  
Ann is called by you.  
Ann is called by them.  
We are called by James.

Ruth is not called by us.  
Ruth is not called by you.  
Ruth is not called by them.  
We are not called by Ruth.

Ruth is not being called by us.  
Ruth is not being called by you.  
Ruth is not being called by them.  
We are not being called by Ruth.

Ruth *is not* called by us.  
Ruth *is not* called by you.  
Ruth *is not* called by them.  
We *are not* called by Ruth.

# PAST TIME.

## SINGULAR.

### SIMPLE FORM.

## PLURAL.

|                |                                    |                                       |                                  |                                       |
|----------------|------------------------------------|---------------------------------------|----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | I called Edwin—.                   | Edwin was called by me—.              | We called Edwin—.                | Edwin was called by us—.              |
|                | Thou calledst Edwin—.              | Edwin was called by thee—.            | You called Edwin—.               | Edwin was called by you—.             |
|                | He called Edwin—.                  | Edwin was called by him—.             | They called Edwin—.              | Edwin was called by them—.            |
|                | George called me—.                 | I was called by George—.              | George called us—.               | We were called by George—.            |
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | PROGRESSIVE FORM.                  |                                       |                                  |                                       |
|                | I was calling Edwin—.              | Edwin was being called by me—.        | We were calling Edwin—.          | Edwin was being called by us—.        |
|                | Thou wast calling Edwin—.          | Edwin was being called by thee—.      | You were calling Edwin—.         | Edwin was being called by you—.       |
|                | He was calling Edwin—.             | Edwin was being called by him—.       | They were calling Edwin—.        | Edwin was being called by them—.      |
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | George was calling me—.            | I was being called by George—.        | George was calling us—.          | We were being called by George—.      |
|                | EMPHATIC FORM.                     |                                       |                                  |                                       |
|                | I <i>did</i> call Edwin—.          | Edwin <i>was</i> called by me—.       | We <i>did</i> call Edwin—.       | Edwin <i>was</i> called by us—.       |
|                | Thou <i>didst</i> call Edwin—.     | Edwin <i>was</i> called by thee—.     | You <i>did</i> call Edwin—.      | Edwin <i>was</i> called by you—.      |
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | He <i>did</i> call Edwin—.         | Edwin <i>was</i> called by him—.      | They <i>did</i> call Edwin—.     | Edwin <i>was</i> called by them—.     |
|                | George <i>did</i> call me—.        | I <i>was</i> called by George—.       | George <i>did</i> call us—.      | We were called by George—.            |
| NEGATIVELY.    | SIMPLE FORM.                       |                                       |                                  |                                       |
|                | I called not Peter—.               | Peter was not called by me—.          | We called not Peter—.            | Peter was not called by us—.          |
|                | Thou calledst not Peter—.          | Peter was not called by thee—.        | You called not Peter—.           | Peter was not called by you—.         |
|                | He called not Peter—.              | Peter was not called by him—.         | They called not Peter—.          | Peter was not called by them—.        |
| NEGATIVELY.    | Peter called not me—.              | I was not called by Peter—.           | Peter called not us—.            | We were not called by Peter—.         |
|                | PROGRESSIVE FORM.                  |                                       |                                  |                                       |
|                | I was not calling Peter—.          | Peter was not being called by me—.    | We were not calling Peter—.      | Peter was not being called by us—.    |
|                | Thou wast not calling Peter—.      | Peter was not being called by thee—.  | You were not calling Peter—.     | Peter was not being called by you—.   |
| NEGATIVELY.    | He was not calling Peter—.         | Peter was not being called by him—.   | They were not calling Peter—.    | Peter was not being called by them—.  |
|                | Peter was not calling me—.         | I was not being called by Peter—.     | Peter was not calling us—.       | We were not being called by Peter—.   |
|                | EMPHATIC FORM.                     |                                       |                                  |                                       |
|                | I <i>did not</i> call Peter—.      | Peter <i>was not</i> called by me—.   | We <i>did not</i> call Peter—.   | Peter <i>was not</i> called by us—.   |
| NEGATIVELY.    | Thou <i>didst not</i> call Peter—. | Peter <i>was not</i> called by thee—. | You <i>did not</i> call Peter—.  | Peter <i>was not</i> called by you—.  |
|                | He <i>did not</i> call Peter—.     | Peter <i>was not</i> called by him—.  | They <i>did not</i> call Peter—. | Peter <i>was not</i> called by them—. |
|                | Peter <i>did not</i> call me—.     | I <i>was not</i> called by Peter—.    | Peter <i>did not</i> call us—.   | We <i>were not</i> called by Peter—.  |

# FUTURE TIME.

SINGULAR.

PLURAL.

## SIMPLE FORM.

|                |                         |                                 |                         |                                 |
|----------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------------|
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | I shall call Edward—.   | Edward will be called by me—.   | We shall call Edward—.  | Edward will be called by us—.   |
|                | Thou wilt call Edward—. | Edward will be called by thee—. | You will call Edward—.  | Edward will be called by you—.  |
|                | He will call Edward—.   | Edward will be called by him—.  | They will call Edward—. | Edward will be called by them—. |
|                | Charles will call me—.  | I shall be called by Charles—.  | Charles will call us—.  | We shall be called by Charles—. |

## PROGRESSIVE FORM.

|                |                               |                                 |                               |                                 |
|----------------|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | I shall be calling Edward—.   | Edward will be called by me—.   | We shall be calling Edward—.  | Edward will be called by us—.   |
|                | Thou wilt be calling Edward—. | Edward will be called by thee—. | You will be calling Edward—.  | Edward will be called by you—.  |
|                | He will be calling Edward—.   | Edward will be called by him—.  | They will be calling Edward—. | Edward will be called by them—. |
|                | Charles will be calling me—.  | I shall be called by Charles—.  | Charles will be calling us—.  | We shall be called by Charles—. |

## EMPHATIC FORM.

|                |                                 |                                         |                                 |                                         |
|----------------|---------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|---------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| AFFIRMATIVELY. | <i>I will</i> call Edward—.     | Edward <i>shall</i> be called by me—.   | <i>We will</i> call Edward—.    | Edward <i>shall</i> be called by us—.   |
|                | <i>Thou shalt</i> call Edward—. | Edward <i>shall</i> be called by thee—. | <i>You shall</i> call Edward—.  | Edward <i>shall</i> be called by you—.  |
|                | <i>He shall</i> call Edward—.   | Edward <i>shall</i> be called by him—.  | <i>They shall</i> call Edward—. | Edward <i>shall</i> be called by them—. |
|                | <i>Charles shall</i> call me—.  | <i>I will</i> be called by Charles—.    | <i>Charles shall</i> call us—.  | <i>We will</i> be called by Charles—.   |

## SIMPLE FORM.

|             |                             |                                     |                             |                                     |
|-------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| NEGATIVELY. | I shall not call Thomas—.   | Thomas will not be called by me—.   | We shall not call Thomas—.  | Thomas will not be called by us—.   |
|             | Thou wilt not call Thomas—. | Thomas will not be called by thee—. | You will not call Thomas—.  | Thomas will not be called by you—.  |
|             | He will not call Thomas—.   | Thomas will not be called by him—.  | They will not call Thomas—. | Thomas will not be called by them—. |
|             | Thomas will not call me—.   | I shall not be called by Thomas—.   | Thomas will not call us—.   | We shall not be called by Thomas—.  |

## PROGRESSIVE FORM.

|             |                                   |                                     |                                   |                                     |
|-------------|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| NEGATIVELY. | I shall not be calling Thomas—.   | Thomas will not be called by me—.   | We shall not be calling Thomas—.  | Thomas will not be called by us—.   |
|             | Thou wilt not be calling Thomas—. | Thomas will not be called by thee—. | You will not be calling Thomas—.  | Thomas will not be called by you—.  |
|             | He will not be calling Thomas—.   | Thomas will not be called by him—.  | They will not be calling Thomas—. | Thomas will not be called by them—. |
|             | Thomas will not be calling me—.   | I shall not be called by Thomas—.   | Thomas will not be calling us—.   | We shall not be called by Thomas—.  |

## EMPHATIC FORM.

|             |                                     |                                             |                                     |                                             |
|-------------|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| NEGATIVELY. | <i>I will not</i> call Thomas—.     | Thomas <i>shall not</i> be called by me—.   | <i>We will not</i> call Thomas—.    | Thomas <i>shall not</i> be called by us—.   |
|             | <i>Thou shalt not</i> call Thomas—. | Thomas <i>shall not</i> be called by thee—. | <i>You shall not</i> call Thomas—.  | Thomas <i>shall not</i> be called by you—.  |
|             | <i>He shall not</i> call Thomas—.   | Thomas <i>shall not</i> be called by him—.  | <i>They shall not</i> call Thomas—. | Thomas <i>shall not</i> be called by them—. |
|             | <i>Thomas shall not</i> call me—.   | <i>I will not</i> be called by Thomas—.     | <i>Thomas shall not</i> call us—.   | <i>We will not</i> be called by Thomas—.    |

## INDICATIVE MOOD.

*The Indicative Mood is that form of a verb which expresses, declares, or indicates an action ; as, I write, you run, the ass eats grass ; or it asks a question ; as, Do I write ? Do you run ? Does the ass eat grass ?*

*The employment of the imperfect participle denotes a continuance of the action and is often preferable to the simple form of the verb ; as, I am writing.*

*The auxiliary verb DO varies the expression of the indicative mood to make the emphatic form of the verb ; as I do write.*

## EXERCISES ON TRANSITIVE VERBS.

| PRESENT. | PAST.    | PARTICIPLES. |          |
|----------|----------|--------------|----------|
| Love     | loved    | loving       | loved    |
| Carry    | carried  | carrying     | carried  |
| Kill     | killed   | killing      | *killed  |
| Wash     | washed   | washing      | washed   |
| Scrape   | scraped  | scraping     | scraped  |
| Punish   | punished | punishing    | punished |
| Whip     | whipped  | whipping     | whipped  |
| Beg      | begged   | begging      | begged   |
| Shave    | shaved   | shaving      | shaved   |
| Mend     | mended   | mending      | mended   |
| Pull     | pulled   | pulling      | pulled   |

I love John. Jesus loved all men. A nurse carries an infant. William is carrying Joseph, Joseph is being carried by William. The infant is carried by the nurse. A porter carried a large trunk—. The large trunk was carried by the porter—. Cats kill mice. Mice are killed by cats. Abel was killed by Cain. The butcher will kill the pigs at Christmas. The pigs will be killed by the butcher. The laundry maid is washing clothes. Robert did not wash his face and hands—. I am scraping stick. The cook was scraping carrots a few days ago. William scraped his shoes. The master does not punish good boys. Good boys are not punished by the master. I shall punish Henry. He will be punished by me. John's father punished him. He was punished by his father. Beggars beg food and money. Food and money are begged by beggars. A poor woman was begging clothes—. Clothes were being begged by a poor woman—. Carters whip horses. That carter is whipping his horse. The horse is being whipped by the carter. I did not whip—. Shoemakers mend shoes. The shoemaker will mend your shoes—. Your shoes will be mended by the shoemaker—. The carpenter mended the broken chair—. The broken chair was mended by the carpenter—. Carpenters do not mend watering-cans. They are mended by the brazier. Barbers shave beards. John is pulling Henry's hair. I am not pulling Henry's hair. Henry's hair is being pulled by John. It is not being pulled by me. A gentleman pulled the door-bell—.

QUESTIONS.—Whom do I love ? Who loves — ? Who loves all men ? Does Jesus love all men ? Who carries an infant ? By whom is the infant carried ? Who is carrying Joseph ? By whom is Joseph being carried ? Who carried a large trunk — ? By whom was the large trunk carried — ? What did the porter carry ? What was carried by the porter ? What do cats kill ? What animals kill mice ? What animals do cats kill ? What are killed by cats ? Who killed Abel ? By whom was Abel killed ? Did Cain kill Abel ? Who will kill the pigs at Christmas ? What will be killed at Christmas ? Who is washing clothes ? What is the laundry-maid doing ? Did Robert wash his face and hands — ? Who is scraping this stick ? What am I scraping ? What am I doing ? Who was scraping carrots a few days ago ? Did William scrape his shoes ? Are good boys punished by the master ? Who will be punished by me ? What do beggars beg ? Who beg food and money ? By whom are food and money begged ? Who was begging clothes — ? Who did not shave his beard — ? Who shave beards ? What is that carter doing ? Who is whipping the horse ? What is being whipped ? What do shoemakers mend ? Was the broken chair mended ? Was it mended by the carpenter ? When was the broken chair mended by the carpenter ? Do carpenters mend watering-cans ? By whom are they mended ? Who is pulling Henry's hair ? Is Henry's hair being pulled by me ? Who pulled the door bell — ? What did he pull ?



## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### TRANSITIVE VERBS.

|        |                |          |                  |
|--------|----------------|----------|------------------|
| have   | had            | having   | had              |
| do     | did            | doing    | done             |
| make   | made           | making   | made             |
| bring  | brought        | bringing | brought          |
| break  | broke          | breaking | broken           |
| build  | built, builded | building | built, builded   |
| drink  | drank          | drinking | drunk            |
| eat    | ate, eat       | eating   | eaten            |
| read   | read           | reading  | read             |
| beat   | beat           | beating  | beaten, beat     |
| steal  | stole          | stealing | stolen           |
| strike | struck         | striking | stricken, struck |

### EXERCISES.

I have two pence. You have a pocket-slate. Isaac had two sons. That lady does good. Jesus did no evil. You do not make boots. Hats are not made by a shoemaker. A boy brought a parcel —. A parcel was brought by a boy—. Henry breaks the coals. William will bring the letters to-morrow. The letters will be brought by William to-morrow. The coals are broken by Henry. God made the world. The world was made by God. The boy broke the window —. The window was broken by the boy —. Thomas was breaking sticks yesterday. Masons build houses. Two bricklayers built the wall —. The wall was builded by two bricklayers —. Masons do not build ships. Ships are not built by masons. Many masons builded a church—. A carter drinks porter. The servants drink beer. Beer is drunk by the servants. I did not drink the milk —. Cows eat grass. Grass is eaten by cows. The pony is eating hay. Hay is being eaten by the pony. Jane ate four apples —. Four apples were eaten by Jane —. Men read books. Dogs do not read books. John read the Bible—. The Bible was read by John —. A carter beats an ass. The master is not beating William —. William is not being beaten by the master. Thieves steal money. Money is stolen by thieves. I did not steal your knife —. Your knife was not stolen by me —. I *shal* be striking the desk presently. The desk will be struck by me —. Robert struck the dog. The dog was struck by Robert —.

**QUESTIONS.**—Who has two pence? Who has a pocket-slate? How many sons had Isaac? Who does good? Who did an evil deed last Saturday? Who did no evil? Does W— make boots? Are hats made by a shoemaker? Who makes hats? Who brought a parcel here two days ago? Who breaks coal? By whom will the letters be brought to-morrow? Who brought the letters yesterday? By whom was the world made? Who broke a window? Was Thomas breaking sticks yesterday? When was he breaking sticks? Who build houses? Do masons build ships? Are houses builded by masons? Who built that stone wall? By whom was the new church built? What do the servants drink? What do you drink? Did I drink milk this morning? Who drank milk this morning? By whom is beer drunk? What animals eat grass? What did the pony eat on Saturday? Who ate apples? Do men read? What do they read? Do dogs read books? Who read the Bible yesterday? Am I beating a boy? Is a boy beating me? Who steal money and goods? Did he steal a knife? Who stole a knife? Did he steal my knife? Did he steal —'s knife? Who struck the desk? By whom was Scott struck?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

|         |           |            |           |
|---------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| boil    | boiled    | boiling    | boiled    |
| skin    | skinned   | skinning   | skinned   |
| dress   | dressed   | dressing   | dressed   |
| dry     | dried     | drying     | dried     |
| stab    | stabbed   | stabbing   | stabbed   |
| drown   | drowned   | drowning   | drowned   |
| clean   | cleaned   | cleaning   | cleaned   |
| kick    | kicked    | kicking    | kicked    |
| brush   | brushed   | brushing   | brushed   |
| scratch | scratched | scratching | scratched |
| obey    | obeyed    | obeying    | obeyed    |
| disobey | disobeyed | disobeying | disobeyed |

## EXERCISES.

The cook boils potatoes. She boiled potatoes yesterday. She will boil potatoes to-morrow. Potatoes are boiled by the cook. John's mother boiled some hens' eggs—. She did not boil crow's eggs. The butcher skins cows and sheep. The Indians skin deer and bison. The butcher skinned cows and sheep last Thursday. A boy skinned a mole last Summer. Butchers do not skin pigs, they scrape them. Pigs are not skinned by butchers, they are scraped. The cook is dressing the dinner. A mother dresses her child. The surgeon dresses wounds. Wounds are dressed by the surgeon. Smith's arm was being dressed—. A child dresses her doll. The boys dry their hands. The wind is drying the earth. — did not dry the cans—. The earth is being dried by the wind. The air dries damp walls. Two sisters drowned themselves last week. — did not drown the kittens. The kittens were not drowned by —. Henry cleaned the schoolroom—. Elizabeth cleaned the hall and lobby—. We clean our slates. The yard will be cleaned by the boys to-morrow. — was cleaning the candlesticks yesterday. Sheep are stabbed by butchers. A robber stabbed a gentleman—. Some horses kick men. All horses do not kick men. A cow kicked a milkmaid's pail—. C— does not brush her own boots. Benjamin brushes the master's boots. Thy shoes will be brushed tomorrow by—. The housemaid is not brushing the carpet now. — did not brush his hair—. John is scratching his head. Ann's hand was scratched by the cat—. Thomas obeys his master. Janet obeys her mother. Daniel obeyed God. The Israelites did not obey God. We disobey God. Adam and Eve disobey God.

QUESTIONS.—What does the cook boil? Did she boil potatoes yesterday? Will she boil potatoes to-morrow? By whom are potatoes boiled? Did William's mother boil crow's eggs? What eggs did she boil? Who skins cows and sheep? Does he skin pigs? What does he do to pigs? What animals do Indians skin and eat? When did the butcher skin cows and sheep? Who skinned a mole last summer? What is the cook doing? What does the surgeon dress? Whose arm was being dressed two hours ago? What does a child dress? What is the wind drying? Who did not dry the cans last week? What dries damp walls? Who drowned themselves last week? Did — drown the kittens? Who cleaned the schoolroom last Saturday? Does A. W. clean the schoolroom? When did Elizabeth clean the hall and lobby? When do we clean our slates? By whom will the yard be cleaned to-morrow? Was Hunter cleaning the candlesticks yesterday? By whom are sheep stabbed? Who stabbed a gentleman? Do all horses kick men? What did a cow kick? Is the carpet being brushed by the housemaid? What scratched Ann's hand? Who obeys her mother? Did the Israelites obey God? Do we obey God or disobey him? Who disobeyed God? Who else?

*INDICATIVE MOOD. (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

|       |           |          |            |
|-------|-----------|----------|------------|
| catch | caught    | catching | caught     |
| feed  | fed       | feeding  | fed        |
| hew   | hewed     | hewing   | hewed hewn |
| saw   | sawed     | sawing   | sawed sawn |
| write | wrote     | writing  | written    |
| teach | taught    | teaching | taught     |
| weave | wove      | weaving  | woven      |
| take  | took      | taking   | taken      |
| shoot | shot      | shooting | shot       |
| ring  | rang rung | ringing  | rung       |
| bind  | bound     | binding  | bound      |
| bite  | bit       | biting   | bitten bit |

## EXERCISES.

Boys catch butterflies. A boy caught a bee—. The hounds caught a fox last—. You were catching rats—. We do not catch wasps and hornets. A nurse feeds a baby. Babies are fed by nurses. — was feeding the pigs last evening. He fed the fowls yesterday. The pigs were fed last year by—. The pigs will not be fed by— next year. Masons hew stones. Woodcutters hew wood. Trees are hewed by woodcutters every Winter. A sawyer saws timber. Butchers saw bones. Sawyers do not saw stones. Stone is sawn by masons. A bone was sawn by the cook last Saturday. Those children write copies. They do not write letters. Letters were written by —, —, and —, a few days ago. That class is writing a lesson. This class was writing sentences yesterday. I shall not write a letter to-day. Weavers weave cloth. Spiders weave webs. The Nottingham weavers weave stockings and gloves. Linen is woven. Calico is woven. Her father wove linen formerly. I teach you. He is teaching names — was teaching that class —. This class is being taught by me. C— took B's letter. You do not take snuff. My knife was not taken by—. B's letter was taken by C—. A sportsman shoots hares, partridges &c. Mr — shot a rat —. — was shooting sparrows —. A gentleman and his servant were shot by robbers —. Mr — will not shoot hares next Winter. Many soldiers are shot. — rings the dinner bell. — does not ring the dinner bell. The door-bell is rung by visitors. The church-bells are rung by the ringers. The yard-bell is rung by tradesmen and servants. They were ringing the church-bells yesterday. Bookbinders bind books. — bound those maps. Christ was bound by the Jews. — was bound apprentice last year. — will be bound apprentice next year. Keep from the dog he will bite you. He bit—. Some dogs bite people.

QUESTIONS.—Who catch butterflies? What did a boy catch? What was caught by the hounds? What were you catching? Do you catch wasps and hornets? By whom are babies fed? By whom were the pigs being fed? Who fed the fowls yesterday? Were the pigs fed by Cockerell? Will the pigs be fed by him next year? What do masons hew? Who hew trees? By whom is timber sawn? By whom is stone sawn? Who sawed a bone last Saturday? What do these children write? Do they write letters? By whom were letters written some days ago? What is that class writing? Is this class writing letters? What were you writing yesterday? Will he write to-day? Who weaves cloth? What do spiders weave? Do the Yorkskire weavers weave stockings? Who weave stockings? What clothes are woven? Who teaches them? What is— teaching? Who was teaching this class yesterday? By whom was that class taught last year? Will that class be taught by— tomorrow? Did Lee take my knife? Is she taking the lesson? By whom was B's letter taken? Who shoots hares &c? Who was shot by robbers? Are many soldiers shot? Who rings the dinner bell? Does Catharine ring the dinner-bell? Who ring the church bells? Who bind books? Who bound these maps? By whom was Christ bound? Who was bound apprentice last year? Will the dog bite? Whom did he bite?

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****TRANSITIVE VERBS.**

|          |            |             |            |
|----------|------------|-------------|------------|
| want     | wanted     | wanting     | wanted     |
| smell    | smelt      | smelling    | smelt      |
| murder   | murdered   | murdering   | murdered   |
| comb     | combed     | combing     | combed     |
| lick     | licked     | licking     | licked     |
| curl     | curled     | curling     | curled     |
| question | questioned | questioning | questioned |
| answer   | answered   | answering   | answered   |
| scour    | scoured    | scouring    | scoured    |
| wheel    | wheeled    | wheeling    | wheeled    |
| count    | counted    | counting    | counted    |
| loose    | loosed     | loosing     | loosed     |
| lie      | lied       | lying       | lied       |

**EXERCISES.**

This boy wants new shoes. Many people want work. That boy wanted a slate and pencil—. She does not want a new frock. Many flowers will be smelt by us next June. We are smelling mint. Mint is being smelled by us. Some people murder others. Some people are murdered by others. King Herod murdered many infants. Christ was murdered by the Jews. Girls comb their hair. They were combing their hair—. They will be combing their hair—. — did not comb his hair. The boys are not combing their hair now. An ostler combs a horse's mane and tail. A cat licks her kittens. Bears lick their cubs. A mare was licking her foal—. A dirty boy licked his plate—. You do not curl your hair. She curls her hair. A hairdresser curls many people's hair. Her hair was curled by a hairdresser. The master questions us. We answer the master. Last—many gentleman questioned us. We answered them. Three girls scour the candlesticks. The housemaid scours floors. The girls were scouring the bedrooms—. The bedrooms will be scoured by the girls—. — counts his marbles. A shopkeeper counts his money. A general counts his army. — will count the boys to-morrow. — counted the girls yesterday. The boys will be counted by — to-morrow. The girls were counted by — yesterday. That little boy is counting the windows. — will count the panes presently. We do not loose the dog. — loosed his neckcloth. James loosed the dog some nights ago. She ties her apron. You tie your shoes. Our pinafores, frocks &c will be untied by us this evening. He loosened his belt. I loosened my neckerchief yesterday. He did not loosen his stock—. C—loosened his bandage.

**QUESTIONS.**—Who wants new shoes? Who wants a knife? Does —'s father want work? Which girl wanted a slate and pencil last Saturday? Does Hollis want a new frock? What did we smell last June? What shall we smell at one o'clock? What am I smelling? Are they smelling mint? Are they smelling roses? Who murdered many infants? Who else? By whom was Christ murdered? Did the Jews murder Christ? Who murdered Peter and Paul? Whom did Courvoisier murder? Do you comb your hair? When? Did you comb your hair yesterday? Shall you comb it tomorrow? What do ostlers comb? Are pigs combed? What does a cat lick? Do bears lick their cubs? What other animals lick their young? Who licked his plate—? Do you curl your hair? Does Mrs — curl her hair? Who curls baby's hair? What does a hairdresser do? Who questions you? Who else? Do you answer your masters? What does the housemaid scour? When were the girls scouring the bedrooms? When will the girls scour them again? Does M—count his marbles? What does a shopkeeper count? What does a general count? Who counted the cans yesterday? Who is counting the windows? Who will count the panes presently? Do we loose the dog? Who loosed his neckcloth? What do you tie? When shall you untie your clothes? Who loosened his neckerchief yesterday? Did Chadwick loosen his bandage?

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### TRANSITIVE VERBS.

|        |          |           |          |
|--------|----------|-----------|----------|
| rub    | rubbed   | rubbing   | rubbed   |
| drag   | dragged  | dragging  | dragged  |
| scrub  | scrubbed | scrubbing | scrubbed |
| watch  | watched  | watching  | watched  |
| dirty  | dirtied  | dirtying  | dirtied  |
| fry    | fried    | frying    | fried    |
| create | created  | creating  | created  |
| rake   | raked    | raking    | raked    |
| carve  | carved   | carving   | carved   |
| like   | liked    | liking    | liked    |
| stir   | stirred  | stirring  | stirred  |
| thank  | thanking | thanking  | thanked  |

### EXERCISES.

We rub our cold hands. B— is rubbing his slate. You were rubbing your slate—. Your slate was being rubbed by you—. They rubbed the candlesticks—. —'s sore feet were rubbed by—. Horses drag ploughs and harrows. — was dragged by his mother—. Last Winter many horses were dragging timber. The girls scrubbed the desks, chairs and tables—. The maid scrubs the bedrooms. The girls do not scrub the parlour floor. The parlour floor is not scrubbed by the girls. The dog watches the house. The boy was watching the corn last August. The Pharisees watched Christ. Moses watched Jethro's sheep. Laban's sheep were watched by Jacob. — dirties his clothes. Some boys dirty their faces. That girl does not dirty her clothes. The boys dirtied the school floor yesterday. The lessons are dirtied by some of the boys. The pigs dirty their sty. The cook fries fishes. She does not fry ham. She stewed beef—. She did not fry it. Man does not create things. God created all things. God created light on the first day. God created the firmament on the second day. God created seas, rivers, lakes, hills, valleys, plains, trees, grass and herbs on the third day. God created the sun, moon and stars on the fourth day. God created the birds and fishes on the fifth day. God created beasts, insects and man on the sixth day. God creates in us a clean heart. The gardener rake the garden walks. The boys rake the play-ground. The gardener does not rake the potatoe-field. Some of you were raking corn in the corn-field last harvest. The gardener did not rake the flower-beds last week. The leaves were being raked by us, some days ago. They will be raked again shortly, you will rake them. Carvers carve flowers and ornaments—. — carved beef last Wednesday. The beef was carved by him. The beef will be carved by you tomorrow. — carved partridges — &c. I like porridge. We like roast beef and plum-pudding. Children like cakes. — does not like tarts. We do not like punishment. Teachers like attentive pupils. They do not like careless pupils. The cook does not stir the potatoes. She stirs the porridge. She stirred the soup yesterday. She will stir the stew next Monday. The potatoes are not stirred by the cook. The stew, soup, and porridge are stirred by her. The idolaters stirred up the people against Paul. Jane thanks her mother. You do not thank—. You thanked Mr A—. Eve thanked God. The heathens thank their idols.

QUESTIONS.—What do we rub? Who is rubbing his slate? Who rubbed the candlesticks yesterday? What did they rub? Whose feet were rubbed? What do horses drag? What other animals drag ploughs? Do elephants drag ploughs? What were many horses doing last Winter? Who scrub the desks, chairs and tables? What else do they scrub? Who scrubbed some of the bed-rooms yesterday? Do the girls scrub the parlour floor? Who does scrub the parlour floor? Is the parlour floor scrubbed by the girls, or by the maid? Who scrub the decks of a ship? What does the dog do?

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****TRANSITIVE VERBS.**

Does he watch the house? Does the cat watch the house? What does the cat watch? What was a boy watching last August? Who watched Christ on the sabbath day? By whom were Laban's sheep watched? Did Moses watch sheep? Whose? Who else watched sheep? Does — dirty his clothes? Which boys dirty their faces? What girl does not dirty her clothes? What did the boys dirty? By whom are the lessons dirtied? What place do the pigs dirty? What does the cook fry? What does she not fry? What did she not fry —? What did she stew —? Does man create things? Who created all things? Who created the light? When did God create the light? When was the firmament created? By whom was the firmament created? What was created on the third day? On what day were trees created? Who created the sun, moon and stars? When were they created? By whom were birds and fishes created? What were created on the fifth day? What did God create on the sixth day? On what day was man created? When were the beasts created? What does God create in us? Who rakes the garden walks? Who rake the play-ground? Does the gardener rake the potato-field? What were some of you doing last harvest? Did the gardener rake the flower-beds last week? What were being raked by you some days ago? What do carvers carve? Who carved the beef last Wednesday? By whom will it be carved to-morrow? Who carves ducks &c? Do you like porridge? Do they like pudding? Who like cake? Who does not like tarts? Who do not like punishment? What pupils do teachers like? What pupils do they not like? Does the cook stir the potatoes? Does she stir the porridge? What did she stir yesterday? What will she stir next Monday? What things are not stirred by the cook? What things are stirred by her? Who stirred up the people against Paul? Did you thank Mr A——? Whom do you thank daily?

|       |             |          |             |
|-------|-------------|----------|-------------|
| hold  | held        | holding  | held        |
| hit   | hit         | hitting  | hit         |
| hide  | hid         | hiding   | hidden hid  |
| hear  | heard       | hearing  | heard       |
| hang  | hanged hung | hanging  | hanged hung |
| grind | ground      | grinding | ground      |
| give  | gave        | giving   | given       |
| drive | drove       | driving  | driven      |
| draw  | drew        | drawing  | drawn       |
| dig   | digged      | digging  | dug         |
| cut   | cut         | cutting  | cut         |
| cast  | cast        | casting  | cast        |

**EXERCISES.**

You hold your pencils. You are holding your slates. She is not holding her pencil. The nails hold the hinges. J. T. held Mr—'s horse —. The coachman hold the reins and whip. I am not hitting the desk. That boy was hitting the desk yesterday. David hit Goliath's forehead. William Rufus was hit by Walter Tyrrell's arrow. Squirrels hide nuts and acorns. Some dogs hide bones. Moses was hidden by his mother. I hear the bell. The Deaf do not hear sounds. We do not hear the clergyman. The clergyman was not heard by the pupils last Sunday. This boy does hear thunder. He does not hear the musical box. The hangman hangs murderers. Greenacre was hanged. A woman was hanged last—. Millers grind corn. They do not grind knives. A cutler ground my knife last—. The carving knives will be ground by a knife-grinder soon. God gives us life and breath and all things. She gave me a box. His mother gave him money—. God gave man a soul. He did not give animals souls. Slates, books, pencils and pens are given you. Shepherds drive sheep. A carpenter does not drive sheep. A shoemaker was driving a pig. A coachman drives horses. — draws pictures. He did not draw this picture. Horses draw a cart. Coaches are drawn by four horses

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS

Rail-road carriages are drawn by locomotive engines. Some packets and luggage boats are drawn by horses. Three horses drew Mr —'s cart—. The gardener does not dig graves. He digs the garden. The labourers dug a deep hoie—. The garden was being dug by the boys last Spring. Careless boys cut their fingers. John did not cut the desk. The potatoe-sets are cut by the gardener. Some boys cast stones. A founder casts grates. Types are cast by a letter founder. The boys cast snow balls last Winter. Daniel was cast into a den of lions. Nebuchadnezzar cast three men into a furnace. Paul and Silas were cast into a prison at Philippi.

QUESTIONS.—What do you hold? What are you holding? What is Harriet holding? What are held by those nails? What did J. T. hold yesterday? Am I hitting the desk? Do the boys hit the desks? What did David hit? Did Tyrell hit William H.? What animals hide nuts and acorns? What are hidden by dogs? By whom was Moses hidden? Who hears the bell? Does Smith hear the bell? Do the deaf hear sounds? Do I hear the clergyman? Did you hear him last Sabbath day? Does this boy hear thunder? Do I? Does M— hear the musical box? Who hangs murderers? Whom does he hang? Was Greenacre hanged? What do Millers do? Do they grind knives? By whom was my knife ground? Who will grind the carving knives? What does God give us? Who gave me a snuff box? Who gave man a soul? Did he give animals souls? What are given you here? Who drive sheep? Does a carpenter drive sheep? What was a shoemaker driving—? Who draws pictures? Do horses draw pictures? What do they draw? By what are rail-road carriages drawn? Are some steam packets drawn by horses? How many horses draw Mr —'s cart? What does the gardener dig? What does he not dig? Who dug that deep hole? When was the garden being dug by the boys? What do some careless boys do? Did John cut the desk? Who did cut it? Who cuts the potatoe sets? Did the girl cast stoues? Who casts grates? By whom are types cast? When did the boys cast snow balls? Who was cast into a den of lions? Whom did Nebuchadnezzar cast into a burning fiery furnace? Where was Paul and Silas cast into prison?

|         |          |           |               |
|---------|----------|-----------|---------------|
| buy     | bought   | buying    | bought        |
| sell    | sold     | selling   | sold          |
| find    | found    | finding   | found         |
| fling   | flung    | flinging  | flung         |
| bend    | bent     | bending   | bent          |
| bleed   | bled     | bleeding  | bled          |
| cost    | cost     | costing   | cost          |
| get     | got      | getting   | gotten got    |
| beget   | begat    | begetting | begotten      |
| gild    | gilt     | gilding   | gilt          |
| grave   | graved   | graving   | graved graven |
| engrave | engraved | engraving | engraven      |
| choose  | chose    | choosing  | chosen        |
| lend    | lent     | lending   | lent          |

## EXERCISES.

Children buy toys. —'s father bought a new cap. — bought a new book last week. — was buying a top—. He was not buying a drum. Grocers sell tea, sugar, and coffee. Booksellers sell wafers. Wafers, pens, ink, paper &c are sold by booksellers. Jacob's other sons sold Joseph. Joseph was sold by his brothers. African chiefs sell their people and their prisoners. Some Americans buy and sell slaves. The hounds find foxes. — found a knife. Pharaoh's daughter found Moses. Joseph's cup was found in Benjamin's sack.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

The girls were finding their books a few days ago. Some boys fling stones. A boy flung his cap into the room. He did not fling the sponge. You did not bend the cane. He is not bending it. — bent the point of a fork. That girl was bending a pin—. Surgeons bleed some sick people. Farmers bleed their horses and cattle. — was bled by the surgeon last Spring. Ann will not be bled to-morrow. Mr— did not bleed Mary, he did bleed George. Mary was not bled by Mr—, George was bled. A good watch costs much money. That book cost ten shillings. This map did not cost thirty shillings, it cost a pound. The cook is getting dinner ready. C— gets twelve shillings a week. Colliers get coals. Sin begets sorrow. Disobedience begets punishment. Gilders gild picture-frames. Button-gilders gild buttons. The inside of the box was gilt by a gilder. Wood and various metals are gilt. An engraver engraves names. — engraved many wood cuts—. He did not engrave those pictures. These maps were engraved some years ago. James chooses shoes. John chooses boots. — choose green frocks. She chose a smart ribbon—. William chose a blue jacket. I chose a green coat. They chose plaid cloaks. God chose Abraham. The twelve apostles were chosen by our Lord. Lot chose the plain of Jordan. I lend you slates and books. I do not lend my watch. Some people lend money. — did not lend us a spade.

QUESTIONS.—Who buy toys? What do they buy? Who bought his son a new cap —? Who bought a new book last week? Who was buying a top —? Was he buying a drum? What was he buying? What do grocers sell? Do grocers sell figs? Do they sell beef? Who sell wafers? What else do they sell? Are books sold by booksellers? Are slates? Are watches? Who sold Joseph? Whom did they sell? By whom was Joseph sold? Whom do African chiefs sell? Who buy and sell slaves? Do Americans sell slaves? What do the hounds find? Who found a knife? Who found Moses? By whom was Moses found? Where was Joseph's cup found? Whom did Pharaoh's daughter find? Who were finding their books a few days ago? Who fling stones? Who flung his cap? What did he fling? Did — fling the sponge? Who flung a javelin? Who did not bend that cane? Who did bend it? Is — bending it? Who bent the point of a fork? Which girl was bending a pin yesterday? Whom do surgeons bleed? What do farmers bleed? Who was bled last Spring? Were you bled last year? Will Ann be bled to-morrow? Did the surgeon bleed Mary? Whom did he bleed? What costs much money? What else? What did that book cost? What did this map cost? Did these books cost twenty pounds? What is the cook getting ready? What weekly wages does C — get? What daily wages does Thomas get? Who get coals? What does sin beget? What begets punishment? Who gild picture-frames? Who gild buttons? What substances are gilt? Who engraves names? Who engraved many wood cuts? When were those maps engraved? Do you choose boots or shoes? Who choose green frocks? Who choose a smart ribbon? Who chose Abraham? By whom were the twelve apostles chosen? What country did Lot chose? Who lends you slates and books? To whom did we lend a spade? To whom do we lend our cart?

|        |          |           |          |
|--------|----------|-----------|----------|
| rob    | robbed   | robbing   | robbed   |
| bury   | buried   | burying   | buried   |
| accept | accepted | accepting | accepted |
| refuse | refused  | refusing  | refused  |
| hate   | hated    | hating    | hated    |
| nip    | nipped   | nipping   | nipped   |
| rig    | rigged   | rigging   | rigged   |
| waste  | wasted   | wasting   | wasted   |
| push   | pushed   | pushing   | pushed   |
| wound  | wounded  | wounding  | wounded  |
| crush  | crushed  | crushing  | crushed  |
| starch | starched | starching | starched |



*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

## EXERCISES.

A robber robs people. A pickpocket robbed a gentleman last September. Several houses were robbed last Winter by housebreakers. The mails were formerly robbed by highwaymen. People bury their dead friends. A squirrel buries nuts. Abraham buried Sarah at Machpelah. The pony was buried by the gardener. Some children accept presents. — accepted apples. God accepted Abel's offering, he did not accept Cain's offering. God will accept the prayers of the repentant sinner. Repentant sinners will be accepted. Shopkeepers refuse bad money. Idle and careless children refuse instruction. Elisha refused Naaman's money. We do not hate our parents. Cain hated his brother Abel. The wicked always hate the righteous. The righteous do not hate wicked people. The righteous hate wickedness. God hates sin. Jacob's sons hated their brother Joseph. Esau hated Jacob. Christ was hated by the Jews. Labour is hated by idle men. She is nipping her arm. The frost nips the young buds. You nipped Charles yesterday. You shall not nip Ann. Ann shall not nip you. They shall not nip you. Shipbuilders rig ships. Ships are rigged by shipbuilders. An old sailor rigged a small ship. The boys sometimes waste the potatoes. Some men waste their money, others waste time. He was careless and wasted the ink. The prodigal son wasted his money. The oil was wasted two years ago. The boys push the gates. They push the cart. James is pushing John. John pushed James yesterday. Some girls were pushing pins —. A sportsman wounds birds. Many soldiers were wounded at Waterloo. A tiger wounded Mr Carter. Mr Carter was wounded by a tiger. A boy wounded a bird. Many hares, rabbits, and birds are wounded by sportsmen. Mills crush grain. Grain is crushed and ground. A woman's head was crushed last week. He does not crush the chalk, he saws it. Many drugs are crushed by the druggist. A fly wheel caught a boy's leg and crushed it. Thomas fell and his nose was crushed. The laundry-maid starches clothes. She starched the shirt collars two days ago. She will starch collars, frills, caps, &c next week. She will not be starching clothes to-morrow. She does not starch clothes on Saturdays.

QUESTIONS.—Who robs people? Who was robbed by a pickpocket last September? Who robbed the gentleman? When was he robbed? By whom were several houses robbed last Winter? By whom were the mails formerly robbed? Whom do people bury? Does a squirrel bury nuts? What does a squirrel bury? Whom did Abraham bury at Machpelah? By whom was the pony buried? What do some people accept? Who accepted apples? Did God accept Cain's offering or Abel's? Who accepted Abel's offering? Whose prayers will God accept? Will repentant sinners be accepted by God? What money do shopkeepers refuse? What did Elisha refuse? Who refuse instruction? Do we hate our parents? Do our parents hate us? Did Cain hate his brother? Did Cain hate his brother? By whom was Abel hated? Who hated his brother? Whom did Cain hate? Whom do the wicked always hate? What does God hate? Who hated their brother? By whom was Joseph hated? By whom was Jacob hated? Who hated Christ? What is hated by the idle? Who is nipping her arm? What does the frost nip? What nips the young buds? Whom did I nip yesterday? Do shipbuilders rig ships? Who rig ships? Who rigged a small ship? Who waste the potatoes? What do some men waste? What do others waste? Who wasted the ink? What did the prodigal son waste? What was wasted two years ago? Who push the gates and the carts? Who were pushing pins? What does a sportsman wound? Who were wounded at Waterloo? By what animal was Mr Carter wounded? Who wounded a bird? Do sportsmen wound animals? What animals are wounded by sportsmen? What is crushed and ground? What was crushed last week? Does — crush the chalk? What does a druggist crush? What crushed a boy's leg? Whose nose was crushed? Who starches clothes? When did she starch the shirt collars? When will she starch caps, frills, &c.? Will she be starching clothes to-morrow? Does she starch clothes on Saturdays?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

|       |         |          |              |
|-------|---------|----------|--------------|
| shake | shook   | shaking  | shaken       |
| shear | sheared | shearing | shorn        |
| shoe  | shod    | shoeing  | shod         |
| show  | showed  | showing  | shown        |
| set   | set     | setting  | set          |
| see   | saw     | seeing   | seen         |
| rive  | rived   | riving   | riven        |
| knit  | knit    | knitting | knit knitted |
| hurt  | hurt    | hurting  | hurt         |
| lade  | laded   | lading   | laden        |
| lose  | lost    | losing   | lost         |
| mow   | mowed   | mowing   | mown         |

## EXERCISES.

The maids shake the carpets. I shook my head—. A dog shook a rat—. These boys are shaking the desk. The board is being shaken by me. Trees are shaken by the wind. Mr D— & I shook hands yesterday. Sheepshearers shear sheep. The gardener sheared the hedge last Spring. Pigs are not shorn. Sheep are shorn. The sheepshearers sheared many sheep last June. A farmer shoes horses. The pony was shod by the blacksmith. M— did not shoe the pony. A farmer was shoeing a mule and an ass yesterday. The master shows pictures. A hyæna shows his teeth. Mr Carter's lion did not show his claws, he showed his throat. The trees show their buds in Spring. The gardener sets beans and peas. — sets the knives and forks. Bricks are set by the bricklayers. I see four men. All the children saw a balloon a few weeks ago. You saw a monkey—. The wild beasts were seen by you—. She rived her frock—. The dog rived—'s cap—. Many old women knit stockings. Miss— knit a silk purse lately. My grandmother knitted stockings. Some of the girls were knitting stockings—. My comforter was knitted by—. His shoes hurt his feet. The bandage hurt G—'s arm. The bright sun hurts our eyes. Thomas hurt the duck last Spring. The washerwoman lades hot water. Miss— lades the milk. The milk was laden last night by—. He does not lose his toys. John lost his knife—. Mr— lost his pocket-book last Saturday. I lost my small penknife some days ago. A child was lost—. The boys find pins. A girl found one shilling last August. Mr— did not find his pocket-book. Mr—'s pocket-book was not found by him, it was found by somebody. Mowers mow grass, clover, &c. The grass will be mown next Summer. You do not mow grass. The gardener mowed the grass plot a few weeks ago. He is not mowing it now. He will not be mowing it to-morrow.

QUESTIONS.—Who shake the carpet? Who shook his head? What did a dog shake? Did the rat shake the dog? Who are shaking the desk? By whom is this board being shaken? By what are trees shaken? Who shook hands yesterday? Who shear sheep? Do they shear pigs? Who sheared the hedges—? Are sheep shorn? Are pigs? What were the sheep shearers doing last June? Who shoes horses? Does a smith shoe horses? By whom was the pony shod? Did Mr— shoe the pony? What was a farmer doing yesterday? What does the master show? What animal shows its teeth? Did Mr Carter's lion show its claws? What did he show? What do the trees show in Spring? Who sets beans and peas? By whom are the knives and forks set? What do bricklayers set? How many men do you see? When did you see a monkey? Who saw a balloon a few weeks ago? By whom were the wild beasts seen? Who rived her frock? Whose cap did the dog rive? What do many old women do? What did Miss— knit lately? When were some of the girls knitting stockings? By whom was my comforter knitted? Whose shoes hurt his feet? Whose arm was hurt by the bandages? Whose eyes are hurt by the bright sun? Who hurt the ducks last Spring? Who lades hot water?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

Who lades the milk? Does the cook lade the broth? By whom was the boys' milk laded last night? Who loses his books? Does he lose his books? Does he lose his toys? Who lost his knife? What did Mr — lose last Saturday? What did I lose some days ago? Who was lost? What do the boys find? Who found a shilling —? Did Mr — find his pocket-book? Was it found? When will the grass be mown? Who mows the grass plot? Will he be mowing it to-morrow? Is he mowing it to day?

|         |           |            |           |
|---------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| hem     | hemmed    | hemming    | hemmed    |
| darn    | darned    | darning    | darned    |
| reap    | reaped    | reaping    | reaped    |
| plough  | ploughed  | ploughing  | ploughed  |
| pick    | picked    | picking    | picked    |
| swallow | swallowed | swallowing | swallowed |
| stain   | stained   | staining   | stained   |
| dirty   | dirtied   | dirtying   | dirtied   |
| borrow  | borrowed  | borrowing  | borrowed  |
| fetch   | fetchd    | fetching   | fetchd    |
| toast   | toasted   | toasting   | toasted   |
| roast   | roasted   | roasting   | roasted   |

## EXERCISES.

The girls hem handkerchiefs. Mrs — hemmed this neckerchief. The neckerchief was hemmed by Mrs—. She will hem a new neckerchief tomorrow. Some of the girls were hemming clothes last night. Ann did not hem her pinafore. The girls darn the boys' stockings. They darn their own stockings. A tailor darned these trousers. John's jacket will be darned by a tailor soon. Farmers do not reap grass, they reap corn. Much corn was reaped by Irish reapers last Autumn. Corn will be reaped again next year. The gardener does not plough the garden. The farmer ploughs the field. The ploughman ploughed yon field some — ago. Hens pick corn. Rooks pick grubs. A robin picked crumbs —. A boy picked his teeth —. A thief picked a gentleman's pocket—. We swallow food. Swallows swallow flies. A girl swallowed a pin —. A shark swallowed a sailor in the Atlantic Ocean. Jonah was swallowed by a great fish. The earth swallowed Korah, Dathan, and Abiram. Ink stains the desk. It stains clothes. Fruit stains linen. Thomas stained his shirt-collar—. Some boys soil their clothes. Children soil their pinafores. A boy soiled his copy book —. Some people borrow money. That girl borrowed a boy's knife. We shall borrow a few types—. Bankers lend money. We lent a wheelbarrow to a man. The boys fetch coals. The maid fetches coals. — fetched the letters —. He will fetch some books next —. The letters were fetched by—. A dog fetched a basket one of the boys fetched my hat and gloves. Eliezer fetched a wife for Isaac. The sons of Jacob fetched corn from Egypt. The servant toasts bread. The children do not toast bread. Bread was not toasted yesterday by Catherine. The cook toasted cheese —. The fire roasts the meat. Bakers do not roast leaves. The meat was roasted —. The meat will be roasted —. The Israelites roasted a lamb.

QUESTIONS.—What do the girls hem? Who hem sheets? By whom was this neckerchief hemmed? What will she hem tomorrow? Who were hemming clothes last night? Did Ann hem her pinafore? Who darn the boys' stockings? Who darned my stockings last week? What did a tailor darn? Who darned these trousers? Whose jacket will be darned? Do farmers reap grass? What do they reap? What do they not reap? By whom was much corn reaped last Autumn? When will corn be reaped again?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

Does the gardener plough the garden ? What does the farmer plough ? Are all fields ploughed ? What field was ploughed — ago ? What do hens pick ? Do rooks pick grubs ? What did the robin pick ? Who picked his teeth ? Who picked a gentleman's pocket — ? What do we swallow ? What was swallowed by a girl ? Do swallows swallow flies ? By what was a sailor swallowed ? Who was swallowed by large fish ? Whom did the earth swallow ? Does ink stain the desk ? What else does it stain ? Does fruit stain linen ? Who stained his shirt-collar ? What do some boys soil ? Who soiled his copy book ? What do some people borrow ? Who borrowed a bag ? What do bankers lend ? To whom did we lend a wheelbarrow ? Who fetch coals ? Who fetched the letters yesterday ? Did Smith fetch the letters —. Who will fetch some new books — ? What did a dog fetch ? Who fetched my hat and gloves — ? Who fetched Isaac a wife ? What did the sons of Jacob fetch ? From whence did they fetch it ? Who toasts bread ? Do the children toast bread ? Was bread toasted yesterday by Catherine ? When did the cook toast cheese ? What does the fire roast ? What is roasted by the fire ? Do bakers roast loaves ? What will be roasted ? What did the Israelites roast ?

|        |                |           |                |
|--------|----------------|-----------|----------------|
| wring  | wrung          | wringing  | wrung          |
| work   | worked wrought | working   | worked wrought |
| wind   | wound          | winding   | wound          |
| win    | won            | winning   | won            |
| wear   | wore           | wearing   | worn           |
| tread  | trode          | treading  | trodden        |
| throw  | threw          | throwing  | thrown         |
| tell   | told           | telling   | told           |
| tear   | torn           | tearing   | torn           |
| sweep  | swept          | sweeping  | swept          |
| strow  | strew          | strowing  | strewn         |
| string | strung         | stringing | strung         |

## EXERCISES.

Washerwomen wring wet clothes. The washerwomen wrung a counterpane a few days ago. A woman was wringing her hands —. — wrung a scouring flannel —. — works collars. Some girls work mats. A labourer worked lime —. Paul wrought tents. Christ wrought many miracles. I wind my watch every night. A spinner winds yarn. A girl wound a ball of worsted last week. — was winding a spole of cotton yesterday. Cotton spoles are wound by machines. The body of Jesus was wound by Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus. Gamblers win money and lose it. Mr. —'s pansies won a beautiful medal —. Soldiers wear scarlet coats. Some rich people wear fine clothes. John does not wear a watch. Mr. — wears a ring. The girls wore cloaks last Winter. That boy is wearing old clothes, and this girl is wearing new clothes. My shoes are much worn. Mr. — was not wearing a wig last year, he is wearing one now. Moustaches are worn by the hussars. The bricklayers and the potters tread clay. The vintagers trode grapes. The boys trode the gravel walks —. Jehu trode Jezebel under foot. Jerusalem was trodden down by the Gentiles. Some boys throw stones. He did not throw the sponge —. That boy was throwing stones yesterday. Bad children tell lies. Some children tell tales. Pharaoh told to Joseph his dreams. The birth of Christ was told by the angels to shepherds. This boy does not tell tales, he is not telling tales. I am tearing a piece of paper, I am not tearing a piece of cloth. Drapers tear calico. A careless girl tears her frock. Books are torn by some of the boys. I tore that lesson yesterday, a boy did not tear it. One girl sweeps the lobby, another sweeps the boy's room, others sweep the bedrooms. Chimney-sweepers sweep the chimneys, they were swept last week. Some boys will be sweeping the yard and the out houses to-morrow.

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****TRANSITIVE VERBS.**

The girls strew sand on the slippery steps. The boys strewed straw yesterday. The barley was strown for the fowls. The wind strewed the fallen leaves. Some little girls string beads. Beads are strung by little girls. Catherine was stringing beads last year. Some girls strung laburnum-seeds, others strung peas. An archer strings his bow. A fiddler strings his fiddle. Harps are strung by harpers.

**QUESTIONS.**—Who wring wet clothes? What did they wring a few days ago? What was wrung by them a few days ago? Who was wringing her hands? What did — wring? Who works collars? What do some girls work? Who worked lime? What were wrought by Paul? Who worked many miracles? What were wrought by Christ? What do I wind every night? What does a spinner wind? By whom was a ball of worsted wound? By whom was a spole of cotton wound? Who wound Christ's body in linen? What do gamblers do? What was won by Mr—'s pauties? Who wear scarlet coats? Do poor people wear fine clothes? Who does not wear a watch? Who does wear one? Does Dr— wear a ring? Who wears a ring? Who wore cloaks last Winter? Who is wearing old clothes? Who is wearing new clothes? Is — wearing his new shoes? Was Mr— wearing a wig last year? Is he wearing one now? By whom are moustaches worn? Who tread clay? What do the vintagers do? Who trode the gravel walks? By whom was Jezebel trodden under foot? Who trode down Jerusalem? Who throw stones? Did — throw the sponge? Who tell lies? Who tell tales? Who told to Joseph his dreams? Who told the shepherds of Christ's birth? What am I tearing? What am I not tearing? What do drapers tear? By whom are books torn? Who tore that lesson? Who sweeps the lobby? By whom are the bedrooms swept? When did the chimney-sweep sweep the chimnies? When will the yard and out houses be swept? By whom will they be swept? When were they swept? What did the boys strew yesterday? Who strewed the bailey? By what were the fallen leaves strowed? Who was stringing beads last year? Who string laburnum seeds? What does an archer string? What do fiddlers string? By whom are harps strung?

|         |          |           |          |
|---------|----------|-----------|----------|
| offer   | offered  | offering  | offered  |
| receive | received | receiving | received |
| slap    | slapped  | slapping  | slapped  |
| haul    | hailed   | hauling   | hailed   |
| lash    | lashed   | lashing   | lashed   |
| kiss    | kissed   | kissing   | kissed   |
| tie     | tied     | tieing    | tied     |
| loosed  | loosed   | loosing   | loosed   |
| hew     | hewed    | hewing    | hewed    |
| stew    | stewed   | stewing   | stewed   |
| lift    | lifted   | lifting   | lifted   |
| bake    | baked    | baking    | baked    |

**EXERCISES.**

Market people offer their goods. A farmer offers corn. Abel offered a lamb. Cain offered fruits. We offer our prayers and thanks givings. We do not offer animals. Christ was offered for our sins. Workmen receive wages. A shop-keeper receives money. Some children receive presents. Merchants receive many letters. I received six letters yesterday. William received a pretty book. You are receiving instruction. The prayers of good children are received by God. The Jews did not receive Christ. Elisha did not receive Naaman's money. Gehazi did receive it. We were receiving new pupils last —. Some girls slap others. I am slapping her. She was slapping him —. A woman slapped a girl —. Horses haul boats. Sailors haul the ropes of ships. Three horses were hauling manure—.

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****TRANSITIVE VERBS.**

Coals are hauled from pits by horses. The lion lashes his tail. Some carters lash their horses. A cruel boy lashed a poor ass —. A mother kisses her baby. — kissed her father last June. A little boy was kissing his sister yesterday. A cat does not kiss her kittens. You tie your pinafores. A bookseller ties parcels. She does not tie her neckerchief. One of the boys did not tie his shoes yesterday. You untie your pinafore. You were untying them last night. I untied a parcel —. The parcel was not untied by him, it was untied by me. William fastens the dog. He fastens the doors. The doors were fastened by William last night. The servant fastens the windows. The lid of that box is fastened. The cook stews meat. Mutton is stewed by the cook. She was stewing meat yesterday. Apples were being stewed by the cook —. You are lifting the desk. Carpenters lift boards. Porters lift boxes. A boy lifted a heavy basket —. We do not lift these stones. Bakers bake bread, cakes, meat &c. A piece of beef was baked yesterday. The cook is not baking your puddings. She is boiling them. Potatoes are baked, roasted, or boiled.

**QUESTIONS.**—What do market people offer? Who offer meat? Who offer corn? What did Abel offer? Did Cain offer a lamb? What did he offer? What do we offer to God? Do we offer animals? Who was offered for our sins? What do workmen receive? What does a shopkeeper receive? Who received presents last —? What do merchants receive? How many letters did I receive yesterday? Who received a pretty book? What are you receiving? Whose prayers are received by God? Did the Jews receive Christ? Who did not receive Naaman's money? Did Gehazi receive money? When were we receiving new pupils? Whom am I slapping? Am I slapping John? Was she slapping him? Who slapped a girl —? What animals haul boats? Who haul the ropes of ships? What were the horses hauling last week? What animal lashes his tail? What do some carters lash? Who lashed a poor ass? By whom was the poor ass lashed? Does a mother kiss her children? When did — kiss her father? Who was kissing his sister yesterday? Does a cat kiss her kittens? What do you tie? Who ties parcels? Does M — tie her neckerchief? Who did not tie his shoes yesterday? When do you untie your pinafores? Were you untying them last night? Who fastens the doors? By whom were the doors fastened last night? Who fastens the windows? Is the lid of that box fastened? Who stews meat? When was she stewing apples? What are you doing? What is being lifted? Who are lifting it? What do carpenters lift? Who lift boxes? Who lifted a heavy basket —? Do we lift these stones? What was baked yesterday? Is the cook baking your puddings? How are potatoes cooked? Are your puddings being boiled?

|        |         |           |       |
|--------|---------|-----------|-------|
| sow    | sowed   | sowing    | sown  |
| lead   | led     | leading   | led   |
| spend  | spent   | spending  | spent |
| spill  | spilled | spilling  | spilt |
| spin   | spun    | spinning  | spun  |
| split  | split   | splitting | split |
| pay    | paid    | paying    | paid  |
| leave  | left    | leaving   | left  |
| keep   | kept    | keeping   | kept  |
| clothe | clothed | clothing  | clad  |
| blow   | blew    | blowing   | blown |
| meet   | met     | meeting   | met   |

**EXERCISES:**

Farmers sow grain. The gardener sowed turnip seed last August. We shall be sowing flower seeds next April. Peas will be sown next March. Wheat was sown last October. A carter leads his horses. Dogs lead poor blind men. Moses led the Israelites. The ostler was leading the pony yesterday.

*INDICATIVE MOOD .(CONTINUED.)*

## TRANSITIVE VERBS.

The Israelites were led by a pillar of cloud and a pillar of fire. Jesus was led to Pilate. Saul was led by his companions to Ananias. Some boys spend much money. I was spending money last Saturday. The prodigal son spent all his money. Some children spill their milk. This girl did not spill her milk yesterday. Women spin wool. Many ladies spun wool formerly. Wool is spun by spinning-jennies. The cotton manufacturers spin much wool. A carpenter splits wood. Some woodmen are splitting stakes. — split the pannel of your door. Matches are split by poor people. Thomas will be splitting firewood in January. A master pays his workmen. Labourers are paid by their employers. Tradesmen are paid by their customers. Taxes are paid by all. The chief priests paid Judas thirty pieces of silver. Jesus Christ paid tribute to Cæsar. We leave the parings of the potatoes. Many emigrants are leaving England. — left school a month ago. Some pupils will leave school next June. Joseph's brethren did not leave him in the pit, Jacob left Canaan. Lot left Sodom. Parents keep their children. Some farmers keep sheep, and many keep, cows. Jacob kept Laban's sheep. Moses was keeping Jethro's flock. We keep Christmas day. Your parents clothe you. The Lord God clothed Adam and Eve in skins. The Jews clothed Jesus with purple. Jeroboam clad himself with a new garment. Goliath was clothed in armour. The wind blows the trees. The trees are blown by the wind. We do not blow the fire. The wind is not blowing the trees now. The dust was blown off that desk by me yesterday. Friends meet each other. Armies meet and fight. Jacob met Esau and kissed him. Ten lepers met Jesus. You were met by your parents last —.

QUESTIONS.—Who sow grain? What did the gardener sow last August? When shall we be sowing flower seeds? Shall we sow flower seeds next March? What was sown last October? Who leads his horses? By what animals are poor blind men led? Who led the Israelites? When was the ostler leading the pony? By what were the Israelites led? Who led Jesus to Pilate? To whom was Paul led? When was I spending money? Who spent all his money? Do some children spill their milk? Did this girl spill her milk yesterday? Did ladies spin wool formerly? By what is wool spun? Who spin much wool? What does a carpenter split? Who are splitting stakes? Who split the pannel of my door? By whom are matches split? When will Thomas be splitting firewood? Does a master pay his workmen? By whom are taxes paid? What did the chief priests pay Judas? To whom did Christ pay tribute? What part of the potatoes do we leave? Who are leaving England? Who left school a month ago? Will many pupils leave school next June? Did Joseph's brethren leave him in the pit? What country did Jacob leave? What city did Lot leave? Who keep sheep? Who kept Laban's sheep? Did Moses keep a flock? Whose flock? Who kept Paul and Silas in prison? Who clothed Adam and Eve in skins? In what did the Jews clothe Jesus? With what did Jeroboam clothe himself? With what was Goliath clothed? What blows the trees? Is the wind blowing the trees? When was it blowing them? Who blew the dust off that desk? Who met and kissed Esau? How many lepers met Jesus?

|          |            |             |            |
|----------|------------|-------------|------------|
| spell    | spelled    | spelling    | spelled    |
| instruct | instructed | instructing | instructed |
| enter    | entered    | entering    | entered    |
| allow    | allowed    | allowing    | allowed    |
| milk     | milked     | milking     | milked     |
| open     | opened     | opening     | opened     |
| close    | closed     | closing     | closed     |
| remember | remembered | remembering | remembered |
| pour     | poured     | pouring     | poured     |
| plait    | plaited    | plaiting    | plaited    |
| paint    | painted    | painting    | painted    |
| print    | printed    | printing    | printed    |

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****TRANSITIVE VERBS****EXERCISES**

Those children spell their lessons. John spells his name. Words are spelled by you. They were spelling their lessons yesterday. I am not spelling these sentences, I am writing them. These sentences are being spelled by these girls. The master instructs the pupils, he is instructing the pupils, he instructed them yesterday, he was instructing them this morning, he will instruct them tomorrow. Apprentices are instructed by their masters. Paul instructed Timothy. Christ instructed Nicodemus and many disciples. Those children's parents did not instruct them. Cows do not enter the schoolroom. Some beggars entered the yard —. Thieves entered Mr — 's house. Poachers entered Mr — 's preserve. The ark was entered by Noah and his family. I do not allow lying. Poaching is not allowed by the law. A milkmaid milks cows. The Swiss milk goats. Cows are milked by the milkmaid. We do not milk cows. Mr — 's cows were being milked this morning, they were milked last night. The maid will be milking them this evening. They will be milked by her tomorrow. The servant opens the hall-door. You open your desk. I am opening a book. The windows were opened by me an hour ago. I was opening a letter a little while ago. Christ opened the ears of deaf people and he opened the eyes of blind people. I am closing this book. We close our eyes at night. We close the doors and windows. God closed the door of the ark. They will be closing those windows by and by. That boy remembers his home. He remembers his lessons. God remembered Noah. Joseph remembered his brethren. The girl does not remember her lessons. William pours the milk. The cook pours water. Ink was poured by — yesterday. A laundress plaits shirt. A girl plaits caps. Milliners plait ribbons and dresses. A painter paints houses. An artist paints pictures. A journeyman painter painted the doors. An apprentice painted the desks. The House will be painted next May. It was not painted last year. Printers print books and hand bills. Copper-plate printers print plates. Woodcuts are printed by common printers. Lithographs are printed by lithographic printers. Calicoes are printed. Some boys were printing lessons a few days ago.

**QUESTIONS.**—Who spell their lessons? Does John spell his name? What are spelled by you? Were those children spelling their lessons yesterday? Am I spelling these sentences? By whom are they being spelled? Who instructs the pupils? What is the master doing? Did he instruct the pupils yesterday? Was he instructing them this morning? Will he instruct them to-morrow? By whom are apprentices instructed? Who instructed Timothy? Who instructed Nicodemus? Did those children's parents instruct them? Do cows enter the schoolroom? Who entered the yard —? Whose house did thieves enter? Who entered Mr —'s preserve? By whom was the ark entered? Does the law allow poaching? Do I allow lying? Who milks cows? What people milk goats? Do you milk cows? Whose cows were milked this morning? When will they be milked again? Will they be milked to-morrow? Who opens the hall-door? What do you open? Am I opening a book? By whom were the windows opened? What was I opening a little while ago? Who opened the ears of deaf people and the eyes of blind people? When do you close your eyes? Who closed the door of the ark? When will the boys be closing those windows? Do you remember your homes? Does that boy remember his lessons? Did God remember Noah? Whom did Joseph remember? Does this girl remember her lessons? Who pours milk? Was I pouring ink this morning? By whom was ink poured yesterday? Who plaits shirts? What do milliners plait? By whom were Miss —'s collars pliated? Who paint houses? Who paints pictures? Who painted those doors? By whom were the desks painted? When will the house be painted? Was it painted last year? Who print books? What do copperplate printers print? By whom are lithographs printed? When were the boys printing lessons? When will they be printing lessons?



*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

|                  |       |          |        |
|------------------|-------|----------|--------|
| be ( <i>is</i> ) | was   | being    | been   |
| come             | came  | coming   | come   |
| go               | went  | going    | gone   |
| creep            | crept | creeping | crept  |
| fly              | flew  | flying   | flown  |
| speak            | spoke | speaking | spoken |
| sleep            | slept | sleeping | slept  |
| swim             | swam  | swimming | swam   |
| sit              | sat   | sitting  | sat    |
| run              | ran   | running  | run    |
| ride             | rode  | riding   | ridden |
| stand            | stood | standing | stood  |

## EXERCISES.

Snuff is in the box ; John was out of school this forenoon ; I am in the school-room ; I am not in the play-ground ; The slates are on the desks ; The earth is below our feet ; The sky is above our heads ; I am before the fire ; The horse is before the cart ; The coach is behind the horses ; — is not near the fire ; Thou art on a form ; We are at home during the vacation ; A boy's cap is over the wall ; Some of the girls will be at home at Christmas ; The cook is in the kitchen ; Two boys were among the peas in the garden last summer ; A hedge is above the field ; Hoops are around the barrel ; Paris is far beyond London ; A neckerchief is about this girl's neck ; — was down a deep pit ; Crape is about —'s hat ; Good people will be with Jesus in heaven ; Wicked people will be in Hell with the devil ; We were in the country last Summer ; He was never in London ; God is in heaven ; Christ is in heaven ; The Holy Ghost is in heaven ; God, Christ, and the Holy Ghost are in heaven ; Bones, blood, and flesh are in our bodies ; Apples, pears, and plums are on trees in the garden ; Many pupils are in the school.

The postman comes with letters to this house ; This boy comes from — ; That boy came to school last August ; The maids do not come into school ; Tea comes from China in ships ; — will not come off the desk ; We come into school at nine o'clock in the morning ; Visitors come to school often ; — came to school in the year 18— ; Mary came to school after — ; Jesus came from heaven to this earth ; A thief came over the garden wall ; The dog came out of the kennel ; The cow did come through the hedge ; — came to school in a coach ; The baker will be coming with bread to-morrow ; Light comes from the sun to the earth ; Rain comes from the clouds ; A new pupil will come to school by the railway.

The maid is going to the cellar for coals ; We go to bed at nine o'clock ; William went to the post-office, with a letter for his father ; — did not go home last Saturday ; Good people will go to heaven at death ; Bad people will go to hell ; Many people go to America in ships ; Idle boys go about the streets ; I went across the river in a boat ; Christ went in a bright cloud to heaven ; The boys and girls go round the desks.

Worms creep in the earth ; Snails creep about the garden ; A caterpillar was creeping up the wall ; Serpents creep among heather ; A snail was creeping on the road ; Fishes do not creep in the sea ; Ivy creeps up the wall.

A robin flew into school through the window ; The canary did fly out of a cage ; Many birds fly over our heads ; The bird will fly off the tree upon the ground ; Hawks fly after sparrows ; Crows were flying over a field ; Pigeons fly about this house ; Sparrows fly by this house ; A blackbird flew into the garden ; Some pigeons fly from England to France ; Larks fly up in the air ; No birds fly down coalpits.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS

The master was speaking to a gentleman in school yesterday ; A gentleman was being spoken to by the master in school yesterday ; You speak with your fingers ; I speak with my tongue ; Ann spoke against —— ; Elymas spoke against the gospel ; The gospel was spoken against by Elymas ; —— was speaking about home ; This girl will not speak to me ; Ann will speak after me.

We sleep in beds ; Beds are slept in by us ; The dog is sleeping on the floor near the fire ; A man is sleeping on the ground under a tree ; You sleep from nine o'clock in the evening till six o'clock in the morning ; He will sleep without a night-cap ; Some beggars sleep in barns among hay ; He was sleeping on a chair at the fire ; Lions sleep during day ; We sleep during night.

Trouts swim in rivers ; Rivers are swum in by trouts and other fishes ; Whales swim in the sea ; A shark swam after a ship ; A ship was swam after by a shark ; A dog will swim across the river ; The river will be swum across by the dog ; Small fishes swim near the shore ; Fishes swim by fins ; Six ducks and a drake were swimming in a pond ; Fishes swim in water ; Some birds swim on the surface of the water ; Ducks swim in the water ; Water is swum in by ducks ; Hens do not swim in water ; Some boys swim in rivers.

You sit on forms in school ; The forms are sat upon by you ; I am sitting on a chair ; The dog is sitting below the table ; —— sits between —— and —— ; That boy does sit near the door ; An old man was sitting on an arm chair near the fire ; The arm chair near the fire was sat upon by an old man ; We shall sit round the table at dinner ; A clerk sits on a high stool ; Some beggars sit on stones in streets.

William will run from the desk to the door ; A new pupil ran out of school ; Dogs run about the streets ; Two greyhounds ran after a hare in a field ; Some little children run after coaches ; Coaches are run after by some children ; Shepherds run down hills after sheep ; A squirrel ran up a tree ; A tree was run up by a squirrel ; The boy ran far from home ; A horse with a gig ran against a toll-bar ; The toll-bar was run against by a horse and gig ; The boys were running round the desk in school ; The desks were being run round by the boys ; The thief ran with a bundle of clothes under his arm ; Police-men run after thieves ; Gehazi ran after Naaman for money ; Hares run among corn ; Corn is run among by hares ; A dog ran through a hedge after a hare ; Water runs out of the pipes ; A fish-hook ran through my lip ; A mouse did run into a hole ; The hole was run into by the mouse ; All rivers run into the sea.

A gentleman rides on his horse along the road ; The horse is ridden upon by the gentleman ; A man-servant is riding after a lady ; The lady is ridden after by a man-servant ; A horse-man rode over a drunken man ; A drunken man was ridden over by a horseman ; Christ rode on an ass in Judea ; Huntsmen ride through forests after foxes ; —— will ride without a saddle ; This boy was riding on a cow at home ; Some monkeys ride on dogs.

We do not stand on the forms in school ; A man stood on the back of a horse ; The cow is standing under a tree ; A poor man is standing at the front door ; John stands beyond the desk ; The boys will be standing round the fire this evening ; —— stands before the fire ; We shall all stand before Christ at the last day ; The dwarf stands between the gaint and giantess ; This boy was standing at the pump ; I shall stand on one foot presently ; —— will stand at the end of the desk soon ; The postman stands at the door with a letter in his hand for you.

**QUESTIONS—**What is in this box ? Who was out of school this forenoon ? When was John out of school ? What is below our feet ? What is above our heads ? Is the earth above our heads ? Who is before the fire ? What animal is before the cart ? What is behind the coach ? What boy is not near the fire ? Is —— near the fire ? What am I on ? Where are you during the vacation ? When are you at home ? Who are at home during the vacation ? Who is from school ? What thing is over the wall ?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

When will some girls be at home ? Where is the cook ? Who were among the peas in the garden ? How many boys were among the peas ? What is about the field ? What things are round the barrel ? What city is far beyond London ? Where is Paris ? What is about the girl's neck ? Who was down a coal pit ? What is about —'s hat ? Who will be in Heaven with Jesus ? Where will good people be ? With whom will bad people be in Hell ? Who were in the country last Summer ? When were you in the country ? Was — ever in London ? Who are in heaven ? Where is God ? In what place is Jesus Christ ? Is the Holy Ghost in Heaven ? What things are in our bodies ? Is blood in our bodies ? What are on trees in the garden ? Who are in school ? Are there many pupils in school ?

Who comes to this house ? With what does he come ? Where does this boy come from ? When did that boy come to school ? Who came to school last August ? Do the maids come into school ? From what country does tea come ? In what does tea come from China ? What will James not do ? When do you come to school in the morning ? Who came to school at nine o'clock ? Do visitors come here often ? In what year did — come to school ? Who came to school in the year 18— ? After whom did Mary come to school ? Who came to this earth ? From what place did Jesus come ? What did a thief do ? Over what did the thief come ? What does the dog come out of ? What did the cow do ? Through what did the cow come ? Who came to school on a coach ? Who will be coming with bread ? With what will the baker come ? When will he come with bread ? From what does light come ? What comes from the clouds ? How will the new pupil come to school ?

Where is the maid going ? From what is she going ? When do you go to bed ? What did William do ? Where did he go with the letter ? Who did not go home last Saturday ? Where will good people go at death ? To what places will bad people go at death ? In what do many people go to America ? Who go about the streets ? How did you go across the river ? Who went to Heaven in a bright cloud ? What do the boys and girls do ? Who go round the desks ?

Where do worms creep ? What creep about the garden ? What animal was creeping up the wall ? Among what do serpents creep ? Where was the snail creeping ? Do fishes creep in the sea ? What creeps up the wall ?

What bird flew into the school ? What did the canary do ? What fly over our heads ? Off what will the bird fly ? Upon what will the bird fly ? What birds fly after sparrows ? Where were the crows flying ? What birds fly about the house ? By what do the sparrows fly ? Into what did the blackbird fly ? Where do larks fly ? Do any birds fly down coal-pits ?

Who was speaking to the gentleman ? When was he speaking to the gentleman ? To whom was the master speaking ? With what do you speak ? With what do I speak ? What did Ann do ? Who spoke against the Gospel ? What was spoken against by Elymas ? About what was — speaking ? Who will not speak ? To whom will she not speak ? After whom will Ann speak ?

In what do we sleep ? Who sleep in beds ? What is the dog doing ? Where is the dog sleeping ? Under what is the man sleeping ? How long do you sleep ? What boy will sleep without a night-cap ? Where do some beggars sleep ? Among what do they sleep ? Where was he sleeping ? When do lions sleep ? Do lions sleep during day ? When do you sleep ?

What fishes swim in rivers ? By what are rivers swum in ? Where do whales swim ? After what did a shark swim ? What was swum after by a shark ? What will the dog do ? What will be swum over by the dog ? Where do small fishes swim ? What fishes swim near the shore ? By what do fishes swim ? What fowls were swimming in the pond ? In what do fishes swim ? On what do some birds swim ? Do ducks swim in water ? What fowls do not swim in water ?

On what do you sit in school ? What are sat upon by you ? On what am I sitting ? What is sat upon by me ? Where is the dog sitting ? Who sits between — and — ? Does that boy sit near the door ? Who was sitting on the arm chair ? Where was he sitting ? What was sat upon by the old man ? Where shall we sit at dinner ? Who will sit round the table ? On what does a clerk sit ? Where do some beggars sit ? Who sit on stones in streets ?

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****INTRANSITIVE VERBS.**

What will William do? Who ran out of school? What beasts run about the streets? What ran after a hare? After what do some little children run? Who run after coaches? By whom are coaches run after? Where do shepherds run? Who run after sheep down hills? What animal ran up the tree? What is ran up by a squirrel? What did the boy do? Where did he run? Against what did the coach and gig run? What was run against by the horse and gig? Who were running round the desks? What were being run round by the boys? With what did the thief run? Who run after thieves? Who ran after Naaman? For what did he run? Among what do hares run? What is run among by the hares? Through what did the dog run? After what did the dog run? What runs out of the pipes? What ran through my lip? Into what did the mouse run? Did the mouse run into my mouth? What was run into by a mouse? What run into the sea?

On what does the gentleman ride? What is ridden upon by the gentleman? After whom is the man-servant riding? Who is ridden after by the servant? Who rode over a drunken man? Who was ridden over by a horseman? On what did Christ ride? Where did Christ ride on an ass? Through what do huntsmen ride? After what do they ride? Who will ride without a saddle? On what was this boy riding? Where was he riding on a cow? Do all monkeys ride on dogs?

On what do we not stand? On what did the man stand? Is the cow standing under a house? Where is the poor man standing? Where does John stand? Round what will the boys be standing this evening? Who stands before the fire? Does he stand on the fire? Does he stand near the fire? Who will stand before Christ? When shall we stand before him? Who stands between the giant and giantess? Where was this boy standing? Who will stand on one foot? Who will stand at the end of the desk? Who stands at the door? Where does he stand? With what does he stand?

|                |                  |                   |                  |
|----------------|------------------|-------------------|------------------|
| <b>Walk</b>    | <b>walked</b>    | <b>walking</b>    | <b>walked</b>    |
| <b>sail</b>    | <b>sailed</b>    | <b>sailing</b>    | <b>sailed</b>    |
| <b>look</b>    | <b>looked</b>    | <b>looking</b>    | <b>looked</b>    |
| <b>laugh</b>   | <b>laughed</b>   | <b>laughing</b>   | <b>laughed</b>   |
| <b>jump</b>    | <b>jumped</b>    | <b>jumping</b>    | <b>jumped</b>    |
| <b>float</b>   | <b>floated</b>   | <b>floating</b>   | <b>floated</b>   |
| <b>live</b>    | <b>lived</b>     | <b>living</b>     | <b>lived</b>     |
| <b>talk</b>    | <b>talked</b>    | <b>talking</b>    | <b>talked</b>    |
| <b>lean</b>    | <b>leaned</b>    | <b>leaning</b>    | <b>leaned</b>    |
| <b>cough</b>   | <b>coughed</b>   | <b>coughing</b>   | <b>coughed</b>   |
| <b>quarrel</b> | <b>quarreled</b> | <b>quarreling</b> | <b>quarreled</b> |
| <b>wait</b>    | <b>waited</b>    | <b>waiting</b>    | <b>waited</b>    |

**EXERCISES.**

I am walking on the floor; Beasts walk on the ground; They do not walk on the sea; Jesus walked on the sea to his apostles; Ladies and gentlemen walk out of their houses; The master was walking in the garden with two gentlemen; An old man walks with a staff; We shall be walking in the country next Saturday; A mason's labourer walks up a long ladder with a hod of lime on his shoulder; — walked over a high hill in the country; That boy walked from the house to —; The child was walking down the stairs; A servant walks after her mistress to market with a basket; The carter was walking after his cart; Robert and John were walking along the road; Some lame men walk with crutches; The master walked with his pupils in the country; A gentleman with two ladies were walking on the other side of the river; Horses walk over the river by the bridge; The Israelites walked through the wilderness from Egypt to Canaan; Christ walked about Canaan with his apostles; The boys walked round about the play-ground; I did not walk by the church yesterday; Watchmen walk about the streets during night; Thou shalt not walk by the canal; The sportsman was walking among the trees with his gun over his right shoulder.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

People do not sail in carts ; They sail in ships and boats ; Ships sail on water ; They do not sail on land ; Many ships are sailing upon the sea to India ; Vessels do not sail under water ; Boats sail along the canal ; Many steam-packets sail up and down the river ; Steamers sail from England to America in 18 days ; Captain Cook sailed round the world ; A steam-boat sailed on the lake ; I was sailing by the Isle of Man last summer. They Indians sail in canoes. ~~x~~ Canoes are sailed in by the Indians. ~~x~~ The Chinese sail in ships called junks. Junks are sailed in by the Chinese. The Venetians sail in gondolas. Gondolas are sailed in by the Venetians.

John looks in the press for his bible ; A doctor looked into her ear ; Her ear was looked into by the doctor ; Those boys and girls look off their books ; They do not look on their books ; I was looking at the pictures above the mantle piece — ; Little boys and girls look in books at pictures ; — looked under large stones for worms ; God is looking down from heaven upon us ; I did look among the pens for your knife ; He is looking towards the sky at the stars ; Robert looked along the road for his father ; A gentleman was looking through a telescope at the moon ; The moon was being looked at through a telescope by a gentleman ; Owls look for mice and small birds during night ; Mice and small birds are looked for by owls during night ; They are not looked for during the days ; They do not look for them during the days.

We are not laughing in school ; — did not laugh yesterday ; Some boys were laughing this morning ; This boy did laugh in church during the sermon ; We laughed at the monkey ; The monkey was laughed at by us.

A boy jumped into a ditch ; A ditch was jumped into by a boy ; The cat jumped out of a barrel ; A barrel was jumped out of by a cat ; James jumped upon the desk and he jumped off it ; I jump to the chair from the desk ; The boys jump up stairs and they jump down stairs ; Some mischievous boys jump among corn.

A piece of wood floats in water ; A buoy floats on the sea ; A cork was floating in the river. The cream floats on the new milk. The clouds float in the air. The ark floated on the surface of the water.

His parents live in — ; Fishes live in the sea ; They do not live on land ; Horses live on hay, corn, and beans ; A cat lives on mice, porridge and milk ; Lions and tigers live on flesh ; That bird lives on seed ; Dogs do not live upon trees ; Rats live in holes under the ground ; Enoch lived before the flood ; Noah and his family lived during the flood ; — lives with his parents beyond — ; Birds live among trees ; Her father lives at — ; We shall live after death ; This boy's father lives near a river. ; Her father lives near —.

The master talks to his pupils in school ; We talk with our fingers ; Horses do not talk ; We talk about home ; A woman was talking to a parrot ; A sportsman talks to his dog ; Jesus talked with the apostles.

I am leaning against the wall with my back ; The wall is leaned against by me ; Jacob leaned on his staff ; Mary leans with her head upon the desk ; the desk is leaned upon by Mary ; I did not lean against a tree.

A sick man coughed during a whole night ; This boy was coughing in school yesterday ; — was coughing last night in bed. We are not coughing now.

A dog and a cat quarreled in the street ; I shall not quarrel with you ; — and — were quarreling some days ago ; Some of the boys quarrel out of school.

A man waits in the lobby for the master ; I shall wait for you in the garden ; A lady's maid waits on her mistress ; The mistress is waited upon by the maid ; Many ladies wait on the queen ; The queen is waited on by many ladies ; Many vessels wait at the quay ; I waited till 6 o'clock for you ; A beggar waits at the gate for money ; A gentleman waits in the parlour for the master ; David waited on the Lord.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

QUESTIONS.—Who is walking on the floor? On what do beasts walk? Do they walk on the sea? Who walked on the sea to his apostles? Out of what do ladies and gentlemen walk? Who was walking in the garden? With whom was the master walking? Where was the master walking? Who walk, with a staff? When will you be walking in the country? With what did a labourer walk up a long ladder? Who walked over a high hill? To what place did that boy walk? Where was the child walking? Who walks after her mistress? With what does she walk after her mistress? Where was the carter walking? Who were walking along the road? With whom did the master walk in the county? Who was walking on the other side of the river? How do horses walk over the river? Who walked through the wilderness? From what country did the Israelites walk? With whom did Christ walk about Canaan? Who walk round about the play ground? Who did not walk by the church yesterday? When do watchmen walk about the streets? Who was walking among the trees? Where was the sportsman's gun?

Do people sail in earts? In what do they sail? On what do ships sail? Do they sail on land? To what place are many ships sailing? Do ships sail under water? What sail along the canal? What sail up and down the river? In how many days do steamboats sail from England to America? Who sailed round the world? Round what does a steamboat sail? When were you sailing by the Isle of Man? In what do the Indians sail? In what do the Chinese sail?

What does John look for in the press? Who is looking for a bible in the press? Who looked into her ear? What was looked into by the doctor? Who look off their books? Do those boys and girls look on their books? Where were you looking at the pictures? What were looked at by me? Who look at pictures in books? For what did — look under large stones? Upon whom is God looking down from heaven? Where did you look for my knife? For what did you look among the pens? At what is he looking? For what did Robert look? Through what was a gentleman looking? Where do owls look for mice and small birds? Do owls look for mice and small birds during the day? What are looked for by owls during the night?

Are you laughing in school? Did — laugh yesterday? Who were laughing this morning? Who laughed in church? At what did you laugh? What was laughed at by us?

Into what did a boy jump? What was jumped into by a boy? What jumped out of a barrel? What was jumped out of by the cat? Upon what did James jump? Off what did he jump? To what do I jump? From what? Do the boys jump up stairs? Who jump among corn?

What floats on the sea? What was floating on the river? In what place do his parents live? Where do fishes live? Do fishes live on land? On what do horses live? On what does a cat live? On what do lions and tigers live? What lives on seed? Do dogs live upon trees? Where do rats live? Where did Enoch live? Where did Noah and his family live? Where does — live? Where do birds live? Where does her father live? Shall we live after death? Who lives near a river? What floats on milk? Where do the clouds float? Where did the Ark float?

To whom does the master talk? With what do we talk? Do horses talk? What do we talk about? Who was talking to a parrot? Does a sportsman talk to his dog? With whom did Jesus talk?

Against what do I lean? What is leaned against by me? On what did Jacob lean? Upon what does Mary lean? What is leaned upon by many? Did I lean against a tree?

How long did a sick man cough? Who was coughing in school yesterday? Who was coughing last night in bed?

What quarreled in the street? Shall I quarrel with you? Who were quarreling some days ago? Where do some of the boys quarrel?

Who waits in the lobby? For whom does he wait? Where shall I wait for you? On whom does a lady's maid wait? Who is waited upon by the maid? Who waits on the queen? By whom is the queen waited on? What wait at the quay? How long did I wait for you? What waits at the gate? For what does he wait? For whom does the gentleman in the parlour wait? Who waited on the Lord? On whom did David wait.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

|       |         |          |         |
|-------|---------|----------|---------|
| grow  | grew    | growing  | grown   |
| sink  | sank    | sinking  | sunk    |
| rise  | rose    | rising   | risen   |
| slide | slid    | sliding  | slid    |
| fall  | fell    | falling  | fallen  |
| shine | shone   | shining  | shone   |
| dwell | dwelt   | dwelling | dwelt   |
| hang  | hung    | hanging  | hung    |
| stick | stuck   | sticking | stuck   |
| seek  | sought  | seeking  | sought  |
| lie   | lay     | lying    | lain    |
| think | thought | thinking | thought |

## EXERCISES.

Vegetables grow in the garden ; Sugarcane grows in the West Indies ; Oranges do not grow in this country ; They grow in hot countries ; Plants grow out of the earth ; Stones do not grow in the earth ; Nuts grow on the branches of some trees ; Feathers grow on birds ; The ivy will grow up the wall ; Flowers do not grow under stones ; Vegetables grow from seed ; The hops will be growing up the long pole next Summer ; The roots of trees grow down into the earth ; Grapes are grown inside of the hot-house ; Some currant-bushes are growing against the wall in the garden ; Some trees grow about the play-ground ; Thistles do grow among grass in the fields ; Carrots were growing among the onions in the garden ; Few flowers grow during Winter ; Many flowers grow during Summer ; Corns grow upon our toes ; The sun-flower grows about four feet high ; Wheat grew in that large field two years ago ;

Stones sink in water but wood does not sink ; A steam-boat sunk to the bottom of the sea last year ; Many vessels sink at sea during storms ; My foot sunk in the mud — ; Peter was sinking in the sea of Galilee.

Some of the boys are sliding on the ice in the play-ground ; We do not slide on the floor ; Two men were sliding along the canal last Winter , He slid down a hill long ago ; Some boys slide in the street.

You rise off a chair ; The cook rose this morning at 6 o'clock ; We shall all rise from our graves at the last day ; Beasts will not rise at the last day ; The boys will rise out of bed to-morrow morning before 7 o'clock ; I shall not rise till 8 o'clock ; The girls rose yesterday between 6 and 7 o'clock ; Jesus rose from the dead on the first day of the week ; Jesus rose on the third day after he was buried ; Cain rose against Abel in a field ; The sun rises in the East every morning ; A flock of crows rose off the field ; The moon will not rise to night ; The sun rises at four in the Summer and at eight in the Winter.

A sailor fell into the sea off a mast ; That boy's cap fell off his head upon the floor ; Apples will be falling upon the ground under the trees in Autumn ; A gentleman fell off his horse in the street and he was killed ; A child fell off a chair upon the floor ; Rain will be falling from the clouds to the earth ; Rain was falling to the earth yesterday ; — fell against a large stone lately ; The boys' ball fell among the flowers in the garden ; Snow falls from the clouds during Winter ; Dew falls upon plants during the night ; A large tree fell across the road.

The sun shines during day ; It does not shine during night ; It will be shining at 6 o'clock to-morrow morning ; The moon will shine in the sky to night ; The glow-worm shines on grassy banks during Summer evenings ; The stars are shining in the heaven.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### INTRANSITIVE VERBS

We dwell in this house ; John will dwell at home with his parents during the vacation ; His father dwells in a cottage by the road side ; God dwells in heaven and in all places ; The righteous will dwell in Heaven with God after death ; The wicked will dwell with the devil in hell ; Jesus Christ dwelt at Nazareth with his parents ; Abraham dwelled in the land of Canaan and Lot dwelled in the cities of the plain ; The Israelites dwelt in Egypt a long time ; Moses dwelt in Midian ; Ruth dwelt with her mother-in-law.

Iceicles hang from roofs in Winter ; Dew-drops hang on flowers ; My hat hangs on a nail in the lobby ; —'s napkin is hanging out of his pocket ; Maps hang on nails against the wall ; Jesus hung on a cross between two thieves ; The earth hangs on nothing ; The lamp hangs from the ceiling of the room ; Absalom was hanging by the hair from the branch of an oak ; —'s ear-rings are hanging from her ears.

This piece of paper will stick to the wall ; Limpets stick to rocks in the sea ; One of —'s shoes stuck in the mud in the field ; Two pieces of wood stick with glue ; Many hand-bills are sticking on the walls in town ; The scales of a fish stick to its body ; Those lessons are stuck on calico with paste.

I am seeking for some chalk ; Ann sought in the press for her catechism ; — was seeking on the ground for her needle ; John seeks in the garden among the trees for birds' nests ; — sought under the bed for the cat ; — was seeking among the pens for my knife ; Some of the boys were seeking in the garden for their ball off — ; Sparrows do seek for caterpillars among the greens and bushes in the gar-

at the  
what horses lie in the stables on straw ; We lie on soft beds ; The ruler is lying on the floor ; A drunken man was lying in the street ; The dog does lie on the floor before the fire ; Two sponges were lying under the desk — ; Lazarus lay in the grave four days ; This boy lay across his bed last night ; John will not lie at home with a pig next vacation ; A poor woman lay in a barn among straw without bed clothes ; The swine lie among straw in the sty ; I lay in bed yesterday morning till 8 o'clock.

That girl thinks of her mother ; John thinks about home ; This boy does not think about his lesson ; He thinks of play ; Pharaoh's chief butler did not think of Joseph ; Peter thought of the words of Jesus and wept.

**QUESTIONS**—What grow in the garden ? Where does the sugar-cane grow ? Do oranges grow in this country ? Where do they grow ? Do they grow in cold countries ? Out of what do plants grow ? Do stones grow in the earth ? What grow on the branches of some trees ? What grow on birds ? Up what does the ivy grow ? Do flowers grow under stones ? From what do vegetables grow ? What will be growing up long poles ? What grows down into the earth ? Where were grapes growing ? What are growing against the walls in the garden ? About what do some trees grow ? What grow among grass ? What were growing among the onions in the garden ? Do many flowers grow during Winter ? Do many grow during Summer ? Where do corns grow ? How high does the sun-flower grow ? What grew in the large field two years ago ?

Do stones sink in water ? What does not sink ? What sank to the bottom of the sea ? What sink at sea during storms ? Where did your foot sink ? Who was sinking in the sea of Galilee ?

Who were sliding on the ice ? Where were the boys sliding on the ice ? Do we slide on the floor ? Who were sliding along the canal ? When did he slide down a hill ? Where do some boys slide ?

Off what do I rise ? When did the cook rise this morning ? Who will rise from the grave at the last day ? Will beasts rise at the last day ? At what o'clock will the boys rise to-morrow morning ? When shall I rise ? Who rose between 7 and 8 o'clock ? On what day of the week did Jesus rise from the dead ? Who rose from the dead on the third day ? Who rose against Abel ? Against whom did Cain rise ? Where does the sun rise ? What rose off the field ? Off what did the crows rise ? Will the moon rise to night ? At what time does the sun rise in Summer ? When does it rise in Winter ?



*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*


## INTRANSITIVE VERBS

Who fell into the sea ? Off what did the sailor fall ? Into what did he fall ? Whose cap fell upon the floor ? What will be falling upon the ground under the trees ? Off what did the gentleman fall ? Who was killed ? Who fell off a chair upon the floor ? What will be falling from the clouds to the earth ? Was rain falling yesterday ? When did — fall against a large stone ? Among what did the boys' ball fall ? When does snow fall from the clouds ? What falls upon plants during the night ? Across what did the large tree fall ?

When does the sun shine ? Does the sun shine during night ? When will the sun be shining to-morrow morning ? Will the moon shine in the sky to-night ? What animal shines on grassy banks in Summer ? Where are the stars shining ?

Who dwell in this house ? Where will John dwell during the vacation ? Who dwells in a cottage by the road-side ? Where does God dwell ? Who will dwell with God in Heaven after death ? Where will the wicked dwell ? In what town did Jesus dwell with his parents ? Who dwelt at Nazareth ? Where did Abraham and Lot dwell ? Where did the Israelites dwell a long time ? Where did Moses dwell ? With whom did Ruth dwell ?

What hangs on a nail in the lobby ? What hang from roofs in winter ? What hang on flowers ? What is hanging out of the gentleman's pocket ? On what do the maps hang ? Who hung on a cross between two thieves ? On what does the earth hang ? What hangs from the ceiling ? Who was hanging by the hair from the branch of an oak ? From where do —'s ear-rings hang ?

To what will this piece of paper stick ? What sticks to the rocks ? Whose  stuck in the mud ? What stick with glue ? What are sticking against the walls in town ? Do the scales of fish stick to its body ? On what are the lessons sticking ? With what ?

What am I seeking for ? For what is Ann seeking in the press ? Who was seeking for a needle on the ground ? Where will John seek for bird's nests ? Who sought under the bed for the cat ? For what was I seeking among the pens ? Who were seeking in the garden for a ball ? What birds seek for caterpillars among the greens and bushes ?

On what do horses lie ? On what do we lie ? What is lying on the floor ? Who was lying in the street ? Where does the dog lie ? How many sponges were lying under the desk ? How long did Lazarus lie in the grave ? Who lay across his bed last night ? Will John lie with a pig at home ? In what place did a poor woman lie ? Among what does a pig lie ? How long did I lie in bed this morning ?

Of whom does that girl think ? Who thinks about home ? Does this boy think about his lesson ? About what does he think ? About what does he not think ? Did Pharaoh's chief butler think about Joseph ? Who thought about the words of Jesus and wept ? What did he think about ?

|        |          |           |          |
|--------|----------|-----------|----------|
| roll   | rolled   | rolling   | rolled   |
| gallop | galloped | galloping | galloped |
| kneel  | kneeled  | kneeling  | kneeled  |
| exist  | existed  | existing  | existed  |
| lodge  | lodged   | lodging   | lodged   |
| burn   | burnt    | burning   | burnt    |
| fish   | fished   | fishing   | fished   |
| graze  | grazed   | grazing   | grazed   |
| pray   | prayed   | praying   | prayed   |
| dance  | danced   | dancing   | danced   |
| mount  | mounted  | mounting  | mounted  |
| bathe  | bathed   | bathing   | bathed   |

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

## EXERCISES.

The ruler is rolling off the desk ; a large stone rolled down a hill into the sea ; Stones do not roll up hills ; A penny is rolling along the floor towards the door ; A barrel rolled from the head of a street to the foot of a street ; Thunder rolls above our head.

Huntsmen gallop on horses in fields after hares ; The black horse did not gallop up the hill ; The hill was not galloped up by the black horse ; A horse was galloping along the road without a rider ; Many gentlemen will gallop by this house next September ; Arabian horses gallop over sandy deserts ; Sandy deserts are galloped over by Arabian horses.

We kneel during prayer in the school-room ; We kneel during prayer in our bedrooms ; We kneeled during prayer this morning ; We shall kneel during prayer this evening ; Daniel kneeled three times a day ; Jesus kneeled down and prayed ; Paul and the disciples at Tyre kneeled down on the shore and prayed.

Fishes exist in the sea ; Dragons and mermaids do not exist in the world ; God and his Son Jesus Christ existed in Heaven from eternity ; A toad existed many years in a block of stone ; Jonah existed in the belly of a fish for three days ; Our souls will exist for ever ; Many large animals existed formerly which do not exist

now.  
at the  
se-what  
travellers lodge in inns and hotels ; Inns and hotels are lodged in by travellers ; John will lodge with his aunt ; Mr — lodges in — ; Poor people sometimes lodge in fields ; Paul lodged at Joppa with Simon a tanner ; Her brother lodged in the country last Summer ; The birds lodge in the branches of trees ; The branches of trees are lodged in by birds.

Wood burns in the fire ; Stones do not burn in the fire ; Coal is burning on the fire ; Robert's shoes were burning at the side of the fire ; The house was burning during night ; The soot was burning up the chimney some nights ago ; The candle was burning in the bed-room last night ; Charcoal is burned in woods ; Coke is burned in large heaps.

I fished in the river with a fly-line for trouts ; Many fisherman are fishing in the sea for cods ; Yon man is fishing under the bridge with a rod ; I shall fish down the river with bait next Spring ; We shall not fish at home next Summer ; Peter, James, and John, fished in the sea of Galilee.

Sheep graze on hills ; Hills are grazed on by sheep ; Geese graze on commons ; Commons are grazed on by geese ; Two cows were grazing in yon field ; An ass was grazing by the road-side near some gypsies ; Bisons graze on the prairies in America ; Many animals graze on the plains of South Africa ; Black cattle graze on the mountain pastures of Scotland.

The clergyman prayed to God in church last Sabbath day ; We pray in the mornings and evenings ; We pray to God, we do not pray to idols ; Idolaters pray to idols instead of God ; We pray for food, clothes, health and grace ; We pray before sleep and we pray after sleep ; Daniel prayed to the Lord three times a day ; Jonah prayed to God out of a great fish,

The girls do not dance in the school-room ; Some of the girls were dancing in their room yesterday ; A girl danced on the tight rope — ; A tight rope was being danced on by a girl ; Gentlemen dance with ladies ; The Israelites danced before a golden calf ; The daughter of Herodias danced before Herod.

Robert's kite mounted into the air ; Smoke mounts up the chimney ; The gentleman is mounting upon his horse ; — mounted up a ladder some days ago.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

We bathe in the bath every week ; The bath is bathed in every week by us ; We do not bathe in cold water ; I bathed in warm water—— ; This boy was bathing in the sea at —— ; People do not bathe in the sea during Winter ; They bathe during Summer for health ; I never bathed in a pond ; Many boys bathe in rivers ; Rivers are bathed in by us.

QUESTIONS.—What is rolling off the desk ? What thing rolled down a hill into the sea ? Will a stone roll up a hill ? What is rolling along the floor towards the door ? From what place does the barrel roll ? To what place did it roll ? What rolls above us ?

Who gallop on horses in fields ? After what do they gallop ? Which horse did not gallop up the hill ? Was the hill galloped up by the black horse ? What was galloping along the road ? Had the horse a rider ? Who will gallop by this house ? Where do Arabian horses gallop ? Over what do Arabian horses gallop ?

Do we kneel during prayers in the school-room ? Where do we kneel during prayer ? Did we kneel during prayer this morning ? Shall we kneel during prayer this evening ? Who kneeled three times a day ? Did Jesus kneel down and pray ? Where did Paul and the disciples at Tyre kneel and pray ?

Where do fishes exist ? Do dragons and mermaids exist ? Who existed in Heaven from all eternity ? What existed for many years in a block of stone ? Who existed in the belly of a fish ? How long did Jonah exist in the belly of a fish ? Will our souls die ? How long will they exist ? What animals existed formerly which do not exist now ?

Where do travelers lodge ? Are inns and hotels lodged in by travelers ? Who lodge in inns and hotels ? With whom will John lodge ? Where does Mr —— lodge ? What do poor people sometimes lodge ? With whom did Paul lodge at Joppa ? Who lodged in the country last Summer ? Where do birds lodge ? What are lodged in by birds ?

What burns in the fire ? What do not burn ? Where were Robert's shoes burning ? What was burning during the night ? Where was the soot burning some nights ago ? What was burning on the table last night ? Where is charcoal burnt ? What is burnt in large heaps ?

Who fished in the river ? For what did you fish in the river ? With what did you fish ? Who are fishing in the sea for cod ? What is your man doing under the bridge ? Where shall you fish with bait ? Will he fish at home next vacation ? What will he not do at home ? Who fished in the sea of Galilee ?

Where do sheep graze ? What are grazed on by geese ? How many cows are grazing in your field ? Where was the ass grazing ? Near whom was it grazing ? What animals graze on the prairies of America ? Where do black cattle graze ?

Who prayed to God in church last Sunday ? To whom did the minister pray ? When do you pray ? To whom do you pray ? Do you pray to idols ? To what do idolaters pray ? Do they pray to God ? For what do you pray ? What do you do before sleep ? Do you pray after sleep ? Who prayed to God ? How often did he pray to God ? What did Jonah do in the fishes belly ? To whom did he pray ?

Do the girls dance in school ? Who were dancing in the lobby yesterday ? Where were the girls dancing ? On what was a girl dancing ? What was danced on the by the girl ? Who dance with ladies ? With whom do gentlemen dance ? Before what did the Israelites dance ? Who danced before Herod ?

Whose kite mounted in the air ? What did Robert's kite do ? What mounts up the chimney ? What is the gentleman doing ? Who mounted up a ladder some days ago ?

What do we do every week ? Who bathe every week ? Do we bathe in cold water ? Who bathed in warm water ? Where was this boy bathing ? When do people not bathe in the sea ? Do people bathe in the sea during Winter ? When do they bathe in the sea ? For what do they bathe during Summer ? Did you ever bathe in a pond ? In what do boys bathe ? What other places are bathed in by boys ?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

|         |           |            |           |
|---------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| ebb     | ebbed     | ebbing     | ebbed     |
| flow    | flowed    | flowing    | flowed    |
| return  | returned  | returning  | returned  |
| depart  | departed  | departing  | departed  |
| rest    | rested    | resting    | rested    |
| mourn   | mourned   | mourning   | mourned   |
| sin     | sinned    | sinning    | sinned    |
| repent  | repented  | repenting  | repented  |
| recover | recovered | recovering | recovered |
| escape  | escaped   | escaping   | escaped   |
| decay   | decayed   | decaying   | decayed   |
| bud     | budding   | budding    | budded    |
| tumble  | tumbling  | tumbling   | tumbled   |

## EXERCISES.

The sea ebbs and flows every day ; Lakes do not ebb and flow ; The sea was flowing yesterday ; It will be ebbing to-morrow ; The river flowed over its banks last Autumn ; This water is flowing over the edge of the basin ; Water flowed out of the rock for the Israelites ; The promised land was flowing with milk and honey ;

But the rivers flow into rivers, and rivers flow into the sea.  
 When he dove returned to Noah, the raven did not return to him ; This girl went home on Saturday and returned on Monday ; I shall go out soon and return before 6 o'clock to-night ; Two of the boys went out and did not return till 9 o'clock last Saturday night ; Joseph's brethren returned from Egypt to Canaan with corn in their sacks ; The master will return from town between 2 and 3 o'clock ; Our bodies will return to the dust, but our souls will return to God ; Jesus returned from Egypt to Nazareth with his parents after the death of Herod ;

Swallows depart in October and return in May ; Some birds depart in Spring and return in Winter ; Other birds depart in Winter and return in Spring ; Emigrants depart from England to other countries ; The flies and frogs departed from Egypt at the prayer of Moses ; Jacob's sons departed from Canaan to buy corn ; Joseph and Mary departed into Egypt with the young child ; Many vessels depart from British ports with manufactured goods ; Jehu departed not from the sins of Jeroboam ; The cloud departed not from the Israelites by day.

People rest from their work on the Sabbath day ; A traveller was resting on a large stone at the side of the road ; God created the world in six days and he rested on the seventh day ; The birds rest on the branches of trees ; Man rests from his labour in the evening.

— mourns for the death of her mother ; Jacob mourned for his son Joseph many days ; Joseph was mourned for by his father many days ; Martha and her sister Mary mourned for Lazarus ; Lazarus was mourned for by Martha and Mary ; David mourned for his sins.

We sin against God every day ; Adam and Eve sinned against God in the garden of Eden ; God was sinned against by Adam and Eve ; Some angels sinned against God in heaven ; The Israelites sinned against God in the Wilderness.

Some people repent of their sins ; All people do not repent ; David repented of his sins ; The men of Nineveh repented at the preaching of Jonah ; One of the thieves repented on the cross ; The people of Sodom and Gomorrah did not repent of their sins.

That boy recovered from fever ; — is recovering from sickness ; — will not recover from his illness ; Naaman did not recover from his leprosy.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### INTRANSITIVE VERBS

The bird escaped out of its cage ; The mouse will not escape out of the trap ; A fish escaped off the hook in the sea ; A thief escaped from a policeman ; Lot and his daughters escaped to Zoar ; Paul escaped from Damascus.

The flowers decay in the garden during Winter ; Leaves fall in Autumn and decay in Winter ; His tooth is decaying ; Our bodies will decay in the grave ; Our souls will never decay ; Oak does not decay soon.

Vegetables bud in Spring ; Trees do not bud during Winter ; The hedges will be budding before May ; Aaron's rod budded in the Tabernacle in the Wilderness.

Some pigeons tumble in the air ; An actor tumbled on a stage ; A sailor tumbled off a mast into the sea ; Some of the boys were tumbling on the green ; John tumbled off a high wall upon the ground ; The child will tumble over that large stone ; A large stone was tumbling down a hill into the sea ; A slater did tumble off the roof of a house and he was killed ; — tumbled on the ice and cut his nose.

**QUESTIONS.**—What ebbs and flows every day ? How often does the sea ebb and flow ? Do lakes ebb and flow ? When was the sea flowing ? When was it ebbing ? Over what did the river flow ? What did the river do ? What is flowing over the edge of the basin ? For whom did water flow out of the rock ? What land was flowing with milk and honey ? Where do brooks flow ? Into what do rivers flow ?

Did the dove return to Noah ? Did the raven return ? When did this girl go home ? When did she return ? At what o'clock shall you return to night ? Who did not return till 9 o'clock last Saturday ? Who returned from Egypt to Canaan ? With what did they return to Canaan ? When will the master return from town ? What will return to the dust ? Will our bodies return to the dust ? To whom will our souls return ? To which town did Jesus return ? From what country did he return ? When did he return to Nazareth ?

When do swallows depart and return ? What birds depart in Spring and return in Winter ? What birds depart in Winter and return in Spring ? To where do emigrants depart ? From where ? What departed from Egypt at the prayer of Moses ? Who departed from Canaan to buy corn ? Into what country did Joseph and Mary depart ? With what do vessels depart from the British ports ? Did Jehu depart on the reins of Jeroboam ? What departed not from the Israelites by day ?

Who rest from their work on the Sabbath day ? On what day do people rest ? Where was the traveler resting ? In how many days did God create the world ? What did God do on the seventh day ? Where do birds rest ? When does man rest from his labour ?

For whom does — mourn ? For whom did Jacob mourn ? By whom was Joseph mourned for ? Who mourned for Lazarus ? By whom was Lazarus mourned for ? For what did David mourn ?

Who sin against God ? How often do we sin against God ? What did Adam and Eve do ? Against whom did they sin ? By whom was God sinned against in Eden ? Who sinned against God in heaven ? What did the Israelites do in the wilderness ?

Do some people repent of their sins ? Do all people repent ? Who do not repent of their sins ? Did David repent of his sins ? Who repented at the preaching of Jonah ? What did David do ? Who repented on a cross ? Did the people of Sodom and Gomorrah repent of their sins ?

What boy recovered from fever ? Who is recovering from sickness ? Will — recover from his illness ? Of what did Naaman recover ?

What escaped out of the cage ? Will the mouse escape out of the trap ? Off what did the fish escape ? Who escaped from a policeman ? From whom did the thief escape ? To where did Lot and his daughters escape ? From where did Paul escape ?

When do flowers decay ? What decay during Winter ? When do leaves fall and when do they decay ? What is decaying ? Where will our bodies decay ? Will our souls decay ? Does oak decay soon ?

When do vegetables bud ? Do trees bud during Winter ? Do they bud during Summer ? What will be budding before May ? Whose rod budded ? What did Aaron's rod do ? Before whom did Aaron's rod bud ?

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

Where do some pigeons tumble ? Do all pigeons tumble ? Who tumbled on a stage ? Off what did the sailor tumble ? Into what did he tumble ? Who tumbled off a high wall ? Over what will the child tumble ? What was tumbling down a hill into the sea ? Who tumbled off the roof of a house ? Was the slater killed ? Who tumbled on the ice and cut his nose ?

|          |           |             |           |
|----------|-----------|-------------|-----------|
| wonder   | wonder'd  | wondering   | wondered  |
| angle    | angled    | angling     | angled    |
| agree    | agreed    | agreeing    | agreed    |
| disagree | disagreed | disagreeing | disagreed |
| swell    | swelled   | swelling    | swelled   |
| remain   | remained  | remaining   | remained  |
| remove   | removed   | removing    | removed   |
| trot     | trotted   | trotting    | trotted   |
| sweat    | sweated   | sweating    | sweated   |
| increase | increased | increasing  | increased |
| decrease | decreased | decreasing  | decreased |
| work     | worked    | working     | worked    |

### EXERCISES.

We wonder at ships and watches ; Beasts do not wonder ; Man only wonders ; The people wondered at Christ's miracles ; We wonder at the sun, moon, and stars.

Gentlemen angle in rivers for trouts ; That boy never angled for fishes ; Robert will angle in a river near his father's house next Summer ; I was angling for trouts in a pond with a fishing-rod.

John does not agree with — ; He agreed with his brothers at home ; Joseph's brethren did not agree with him.

Some of the boys disagree in the play-ground ; Mary will not disagree with her brothers and sisters at home ; Lot's servants disagreed with Abraham's servants ; Laban agreed with Jacob at first, he disagreed with him afterwards.

—'s cheek swelled with tooth-ache ; Stones do not swell ; Her throat swelled from cold — ; The sponge swells in water ; The river swells during a flood.

A thief remained in prison for nine months ; The wicked will remain in hell for ever ; Those pupils will remain at school for five years ; I remained for one week in London ; Ladies and gentlemen do not remain long in the school ; Jeremiah the prophet remained in a dungeon many days.

— will remove to a new house ; —'s father removed from — to — ; Many people remove from old houses to new houses ; The Lord removed the swarms of flies from Egypt.

The horse trots along the road ; That horse is not trotting, it is walking ; James trotted on a horse at home ; — was not trotting yesterday, he was galloping.

That horse is dragging a heavy cart and it is sweating ; The coach-horses will be sweating on the road ; Trees do not sweat.

The pupils in the school increase ; The Israelites increased in Canaan ; The flowers will increase in the garden next summer ; The waters increased after Noah was in the ark.

The girls decreased and the boys increased — ; The water decreased and Noah came out of the ark ; The river will decrease after the rain ; The length of the day decreases from the end of June to the end of December ; it increases from the end of December to the end of June.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

Some of the girls work in the kitchen with the cook ; We are not working in school ; This boy was working with his father when he was at home ; Colliers work under the ground ; Many men work from six o'clock in the morning till six o'clock in the evening ; Masons work without their coats ; The girls will work after school ; People work for money ; Two big girls were working in the kitchen instead of the cook.

**QUESTIONS.**—At what things do we wonder ? Do beasts wonder ? Who only wonders ? Who wondered at Christ's miracles ? Who wonder at the sun ? At what other things do we wonder ?

Who angle in rivers for trouts ? For what did that boy angle ? Where did Robert angle ? When did he angle ? Who was angling in a pond ? What was I doing in a pond ?

With whom does John not agree ? Who agreed with his brother at home ? Who did not agree with Joseph ?

Who disagreed in the play-ground ? What do some of the boys do in the play-ground ? With whom will Mary not disagree ? Whose servant disagreed ? With whom did Lot's servants disagree ? Did Laban agree or disagree with Jacob at first ?

Whose cheek swells ? With what does his cheek swell ? Do stones swell ? From what is her throat swelled ? What swells in water ? When does the river swell ?

How long did the thief remain in prison ? In what place will the wicked remain ? Who will remain in hell for ever ? How long will those pupils remain at this school ? In what city did I remain one week ? Who do not remain long in school ? How long did Jeremiah remain in a dungeon ?

Who will remove to a new house ? To what place did his father remove ? Who remove from old houses to new houses ? Who removed the swarms of flies from Egypt ?

What animal trots along the road ? Is that horse trotting ? What is it doing ? Where did James trot ? On what did he trot ? Was — trotting yesterday ? What was he doing ?

What is that horse doing ? Is it sweating ? What animals will be sweating along the road ? Do trees sweat ?

Do the pupils in this school increase ? Do they decrease ? Who increased in Canaan ? Where did the Israelites increase ? When will the flowers increase ? What increased after Noah was in the ark ?

Do the girls decrease ? Do they increase ? What decreased ? What did Noah do ? When will the river decrease ? When does the day decrease ? When does it increase ? Is it increasing now ?

Who work in the kitchen ? With whom do some of the girls work ? Are we working in school ? What was this boy doing at home ? With whom was he working ? Where do colliers work ? Who work from 6 o'clock in the morning till 6 o'clock in the evening ? Who work with their coats off ? What do the girls do after school ? For what do people work ? Who were working yesterday in the kitchen ? Instead of whom were the girls working ?

|        |        |           |         |
|--------|--------|-----------|---------|
| arise  | arose  | arising   | arisen  |
| abide  | abode  | abiding   | abode   |
| awake  | awoke  | awaking   | awaked  |
| bleed  | bled   | bleeding  | bled    |
| flee   | fled   | fleeing   | flown   |
| sing   | sang   | singing   | sung    |
| spring | sprang | springing | sprung  |
| shrink | shrank | shrinking | shrunk  |
| stink  | stank  | stinking  | stunk   |
| thrive | throve | thriving  | thriven |
| swing  | swung  | swinging  | swung   |
| spit   | spat   | spitting  | spitten |

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

## EXERCISES.

Vapours arise from marshy ground ; Many of the bodies of the saints arose from their graves at the death of Christ ; Both righteous people and wicked people will arise from the dead at the last day.

We abide in this house ; When Christ was born shepherds were abiding in the fields by night ; — never abode in France ; Christ abode with his parents in Egypt till Herod died ; Balaam saw Israel abiding in their tents ; Blind people will never abide in this house.

The maid awoke at five o'clock this morning ; That boy did not awake till eight o'clock yesterday ; We awake out of sleep ; Pharaoh awoke after his dreams.

— 's nose was bleeding in school yesterday ; My finger does not bleed ; Jesus bled upon the cross ; A dog bit a sheep and it bled to death ; Animals bleed but minerals do not.

A hare flees from a grey-hound ; Jacob fled away from Laban ; The people of Israel fled from Goliath ; Jonah fled from God ; Moses fled to Midian from Egypt ; Thieves flee from policemen ; Policemen are fled from by thieves ; A man stole much money and he fled from this country to America.

People sing to God in churches on the Sabbath ; A poor girl was singing in the street for money — ; We do not sing in school ; The canary sings in the cage ; The people sang in church last Sabbath ; They will sing again next Sabbath.

Vegetables spring out of the earth ; The new grass springs in the fields in April ; The cat sprang at a mouse ; A mouse was sprung at by the cat ; Water sprang from a rock ; Water is springing in the well ; Lions spring upon smaller animals ; Small animals are sprung upon by lions.

Flannel shrinks in hot water ; His trowsers shrank with washing ; Leather does not shrink in water ; Wood shrinks with heat.

A dead horse stinks in a ditch ; A fox does stinks in its hole ; The dunghill stinks much in Summer

The river of Egypt stank when the fish in it died — ; The manna that was laid up for the Sabbath did not stink.

Trees and flowers thrive in the garden ; Vines do not thrive in this country ; The horse did not thrive on hay he did thrive on corn and beans ; The cows do not thrive in the cow-house on hay during Winter ; They will thrive on grass in the fields next Spring

The girls and boys swing in the play-ground ; That boy swung on a tree at home ; Monkeys swing on the branches of trees ; Branches of trees are swung on by monkeys ; I shall not swing on the door ; The door will not be swung on by me ; — swung on the garden gate.

That boy is spitting on the floor ; The floor is being spit upon by that boy ; One of the boys spat upon the stairs ; The stairs were spitten upon by one of the boys ; A man was spitting into a spit-box ; I shall not spit on the floor ; The floor will not be spitten on by me

QUESTIONS.—What arise from marshy ground ? From what do vapours rise ? Who arise from their graves at the death of Christ ? Will the righteous rise from the dead at the last day ? Who else will arise ? Does the sun arise in the evening ? When does it arise ?

Who abide in this house ? Where were shepherds abiding when Christ was born ? Do — ever abide in France ? Where did Christ abide till Herod died ? Who saw Israel abiding in their tents ? Who will never abide in this house ?

At what o'clock did the maid awake this morning ? Who did not awake till 8 o'clock yesterday ? Who awoke out of their sleep ? Did Pharaoh awake after his dreams ?

Whose nose was bleeding in school ? Where was it bleeding ? What does not bleed ? Who bled upon the cross ? What did the dog bite ? Did the sheep die ? Do animals bleed ? Do minerals bleed ?



*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

From what does a hare flee? Who fled away from Laban? From whom did the Israelites flee? To where did Moses flee? Who fled from God? What did Jonah do? Who flee from policemen? From whom do thieves flee? Who are fled from by thieves? What did a man steal? What did he do? To what place did he flee?

Who sing in churches to God? On what day do they sing in churches? For what was the poor girl singing in the street? Do you sing in school? What bird sings? When did the people sing in the church? What will they do next Sabbath?

What spring out of the earth? When does the new grass spring? At what did the cat spring? What was sprung at by the cat? Out of what does water spring? What sprang of the rock? What is springing in the well? Upon what do lions spring? By what are small animals sprung upon?

What shrinks in hot water? Whose trowsers shrunk? Does leather shrink in water? With what does wood shrink?

What stinks in the ditch? Where does a fox stink? What stinks much in summer? In what season does the dunghill stink much? When did the river of Egypt stink? Did the manna sink that was laid up by the Israelites for the sabbath?

When do trees and flowers thrive? Do vines thrive in this Country? On what did the horse thrive? On what did he not thrive? Do the cows thrive on hay in the cow-house? On what will they thrive? When will they thrive?

Who swing in the play-ground? On what did that boy swing at home? What animals swing on the branches of trees? What are swung on by monkeys? On what shall I not swing? What will not be swung on by me? Who swung on the garden gate?

Who is spitting on the floor? What is that boy doing? What is being spitten on by him? Who spat on the stairs? On what did one of the boys spit? What was spitted on by one of the boys? Who was spitting into a spit box? Into what did the man spit? Shall you spit on the floor? What will not be spitten on by you?

|          |            |             |            |
|----------|------------|-------------|------------|
| bow      | bowed      | bowing      | bowed      |
| courtesy | courtesied | courtesying | courtesied |
| weary    | wearied    | wearying    | wearied    |
| reflect  | reflected  | reflecting  | reflected  |
| gush     | gushed     | gushing     | gushed     |
| drift    | drifted    | drifting    | drifted    |
| preach   | preached   | preaching   | preached   |
| travel   | travelled  | travelling  | travelled  |
| step     | stepped    | stepping    | stepped    |
| sneeze   | sneezed    | sneezing    | sneezed    |
| wither   | withered   | withering   | withered   |
| faint    | fainted    | fainting    | fainted    |

## EXERCISES.

The boys will bow to you at the door; The girls will not bow; They will courtesy; Joseph's brethren bowed down to him; The Canaanites bowed down to Baal; Mordecai bowed not down to Haman.

A beggar girl courtesied to a lady in the street; A lady courtesied to a gentleman; The gentleman did not courtesy to the lady he bowed to her; Ladies courtesy to each other.

Some of the young pupils weary in the school; These boys weary at home during the vacation; We are not weary in school just now; Little children do weary in church during the sermon; Lazy people weary soon; The boys did not weary in the play-ground this morning.

Men reflect; Beasts do not reflect; Good people reflect upon death; Sinners do not reflect upon the knowledge of God; Pious people reflect on God's goodness and mercy.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

Water gushes out of the pipe into the pail ; Water gushed out of a rock in the wilderness ; Tears were gushing from ——'s eyes —— ; Water does not gush into the garden ; Blood was gushing out of a vein when —— was bled ; Water gushed down a hill into the river ; Water gushes through channels and over rocks and forms waterfalls.

A vessel drifted on a rock in the sea ; Many ships drift to the shore during stormy weather ; Snow drifts in heaps with the wind ; Icebergs drift together in the Polar Seas.

A clergyman preaches to people in the church ; Many ministers preached about Jesus Christ last Sabbath ; Jesus preached to many people in Judea ; Many people in Judea were preached to by Jesus Christ ; John the Baptist preached in the wilderness ; Paul the Apostle preached to the Gentiles ; The Gentiles were preached to by Paul.

A man travelled from London to Edinburgh in three days ; Some people travel to distant countries for their health ; Mungo Park was travelling in Africa when he was killed ; —— travelled from —— to —— in a coach ; Paul the apostle travelled through many countries ; Many countries were travelled through by Paul ; Many Englishmen travel in France and Italy ; Vast numbers of people travel by the railways.

People step over gutters and loose stones ; —— is stepping over the ruler ; —— is stepping over the desks ; I was stepping over a ditch in the country ; The visitors will be stepping into the coach —— ; The children will not step on the flowers in the garden ; The flowers in the garden will not be stepped on by the children ; A man stepped out of a boat in the sea ; Many people stepped into the pool of Bethesda and were healed.

This boy was sneezing in school —— ; She will be sneezing with the snuff ; —— will be sneezing presently ; A little girl sneezed many times yesterday

Flowers wither during Autumn ; This flower will wither on the mantle-piece ; All the flowers are withering in the garden with the heat of the sun ; The leaves will wither before Winter.

A lady fainted in church last Sabbath ; The man fainted from loss of blood ; —— never fainted ; Sick people faint sometimes ; A poor woman fainted with hunger ; A boy fainted from weariness ; People sometimes faint from fear.

QUESTIONS.—What will the boys do at the door ? To whom will they bow ? Will the girls bow ? What will they do ? Who bowed down to Joseph ? What did the Canaanites bow down to ? Did Mordecai bow down to Haman ?

Who courtesied to a lady in the street ? What did the beggar girl do ? Who courtesied to a gentleman ? What did he do ? To whom did he bow ? To whom do ladies courtesy ?

Who weary in school ? Do all the scholars weary in school ? Where did those boys weary ? When did they weary at home ? Are we wearying in school just now ? Where do little children weary ? What people weary soon ? Did the boys weary in the play-ground this morning ?

Who reflect ? Do beasts reflect ? Who reflect upon death ? Upon what do good people reflect ? Do sinners reflect upon the knowledge of God ? What do pious people reflect upon ?

What gushes out of the pipe ? Into what does the water gush ? Out of what did water gush ? Where did water gush out of a rock ? What were gushing from ——'s eyes ? Does water gush into the garden ? Will blood gush out of the wall ? Was it gushing out of a vein when —— was bled ? What gushed down a hill into the river ? What gushes through channels and forms waterfalls ?

What drifted on a rock in the sea ? On what did the vessel drift ? What drift to the shore during stormy weather ? In what does snow drift ? Do large stones drift ? Where do ice-bergs drift together ?

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

Who preaches to people in church ? About whom did many ministers preach last Sabbath ? To whom did Jesus preach ? Where did he preach to many people ? Who were preached to by Jesus Christ ? Where did John the Baptist preach ? To whom did Paul preach ? Who were preached to by Paul ?

Who travelled from London to Edinburgh ? Where do some people travel for their health ? Who was travelling in Africa ? Who travelled from ——— to ——— in a coach ? Who travelled through many countries ? Where do many Englishmen travel ? How do vast numbers of people travel ?

What do people step over ? Over what is ——— stepping ? Is ——— stepping over the desks ? Who was stepping over a ditch in the country ? Into what will the visitors be stepping ? Will the children be stepping on the flowers in the garden ? Who stepped out of a boat ? Into what did the man step ? Into what pool did many sick people step ?

Who was sneezing in school ? With what will she sneeze ? Who will be sneezing presently ? Who sneezed many times yesterday ?

When do flowers wither ? Where will this flower wither ? Are the flowers withering in the garden ? With what are they withering ? When will the leaves of the trees wither ?

Who fainted in church last Sabbath ? What did the lady do in church ? From what did the man faint ? Did ——— ever faint ? Who never fainted ? Who sometimes faint ? With what did a poor woman faint ? From what did a boy faint ? From what do people sometimes faint ?

|           |            |             |            |
|-----------|------------|-------------|------------|
| rejoice   | rejoiced   | rejoicing   | rejoiced   |
| sigh      | sighed     | sighing     | sighed     |
| toil      | toiled     | toiling     | toiled     |
| expire    | expired    | expiring    | expired    |
| perspire  | perspired  | perspiring  | perspired  |
| behave    | behaved    | behaving    | behaved    |
| misbehave | misbehaved | misbehaving | misbehaved |
| stoop     | stooped    | stooping    | stooped    |
| improve   | improved   | improving   | improved   |
| yawn      | yawned     | yawning     | yawned     |
| boast     | boasted    | boasting    | boasted    |
| nod       | nodded     | nodding     | nodded     |

## EXERCISES.

Saints rejoice in Heaven with God ; We shall be rejoicing on Christmas day ; Angels rejoiced at the birth of Christ ; Many people rejoiced at the birth of the Princess Royal ; When the wise men saw the star they rejoiced ; Elizabeth's friends rejoiced with her when John was born.

A woman sighs for the death of her child ; Boys do not sigh at play ; Israel sighed because of their bondage ; Jesus sighed when he said Ephphatha to the deaf man.

Labourers toil in the fields for money ; Money is toiled for by the labourers ; Her mother toils from morning till night ; The queen does not toil as labourers toil ; The Israelites toiled for Pharaoh in Egypt ; The lilies toil not neither do they spin.

—— expired at six o'clock on —— ; All of us will expire ; Jesus expired on the cross on Mount Calvary.

We perspire during hot weather ; Some of the boys were perspiring in the laundry ; I do not perspire in school ; He perspired in bed last night ; This boy was perspiring in the country last Summer.

This boy behaves well at school ; He did not behave well at home ; —— does not behave well ; —— is not behaving well now, but he behaved well a few days ago.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS

Good children do not misbehave at home, nor at school, nor at church, nor in the street ; Some of the boys were misbehaving yesterday ; — misbehaved at home to his mother ; — misbehaved in church —.

We stoop to go into low places ; She is stooping for a pin ; I shall stoop at the door ; Many old people stoop in walking ; — stooped within the pig-stye ; — was stooping under the desk an hour ago.

This girl improves in writing ; Samuel improved in wisdom ; The scholars are improving in knowledge ; —'s health will improve at home in the country ; — does not improve in writing but he improves in composition.

Some lazy boys and girls yawn in school ; — was yawning in bed this morning ; You do not yawn when you are attentive ; I am not yawning ; — was yawning a little while ago.

— boasts of his writing ; Goliath boasted of his strength ; — boasted of his father's fine house ; Mary does not boast of her clothes ; Some people boast of their riches ; Riches are boasted of by some people ; Beasts do not boast.

Friends nod to each other ; I am nodding to that boy ; — was nodding on a chair at the fire ; A man did nod in church during the sermon ; We are not nodding in school ; People nod in their sleep.

**QUESTIONS**—Who rejoice in heaven ? With whom do saints rejoice in heaven ? On what day shall we be rejoicing ? When did angels rejoice ? At whose birth did many people rejoice ? What did many people do at the birth of the princess Royal ? When did the wise men rejoice ? Who rejoiced with Elizabeth ? When ?

For what did a woman sigh ? Who do not sigh at play ? Why did Israel sigh ? When did Jesus sigh ?

Who toil in fields ? What is toiled for by labourers ? How long does her mother toil ? Does the queen toil like labourers ? Where did the Israelites toil ? For whom did the Israelites toil ? Do the lilies of the field toil ?

Who expired at six o'clock ? Who will expire ? On what did Jesus Christ expire ?

What do we do during hot weather ? Who were perspiring in the laundry ? Do I perspire in school ? Who perspired in bed last night ? Where was this boy perspiring ?

Who behaves well at school ? Did he behave well at home ? How did he behave at home ? Who does not behave well ? Who is not behaving well now ? Where did he behave well ?

Who do not misbehave any where ? Who were misbehaving in school yesterday ? Who misbehaved at home ? Who misbehaved at church ?

To go where do we stoop ? For what is she stooping ? Who will stoop at the door ? What do many old people do ? Who stooped within the pigstye ? Who was stooping under the desk ?

Who improves in writing ? Does she improve in sewing ? In what did Samuel improve ? Who are improving in knowledge ? In what are the children improving ? Whose health will improve at home ? Does — improve in writing ? Does he improve in composition ?

Who yawns in school ? Do diligent scholars yawn ? Where was — yawning ? Do you yawn when you are attentive ? Am I yawning ?

What does — do ? Of what does he boast ? Who boasted of his strength ? Of what did — boast ? Of whose house did he boast ? Who does not boast ? Of what do some people boast ? Do beasts boast ?

To whom am I nodding ? Who was nodding at the fire ? On what was he nodding ? Who did nod in church during the sermon ? Are we nodding in school ? In what do people nod ?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS,

|         |           |            |           |
|---------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| dry     | dried     | drying     | dried     |
| ascend  | ascend    | ascending  | ascended  |
| descend | descended | descending | descended |
| march   | marched   | marching   | marched   |
| wrestle | wrestled  | wrestling  | wrestled  |
| fester  | festered  | festering  | festered  |
| mock    | mocked    | mocking    | mocked    |
| drip    | dripped   | dripping   | dripped   |
| alight  | alighted  | alighting  | alighted  |
| perch   | perched   | perching   | perched   |
| move    | moved     | moving     | moved     |
| tick    | ticked    | ticking    | ticked    |

## EXERCISES.

The clothes are drying on the screens in the laundry ; The sheets were drying on the green yesterday ; The roads dry fast on a clear windy day ; The shirt will dry at the fire during the night ; The floor will be dry before eight o'clock to-night.

Smoke ascends in the air ; A balloon ascended in the air lately ; Vapours ascend from the earth to the clouds during the day ; Jesus ascended to Heaven in a bright cloud ; Elijah ascended to Heaven in a chariot of fire ; Mr Green ascended from Liverpool in a balloon ; Stones do not ascend in the air ; They descend.

The balloon was descending to the ground ; Rain descends from the clouds to the earth ; The Lord descended in a cloud to Mount Sinai ; Dew descends upon plants during the night.

Soldiers march in the barrack-yard ; The barrack-yard is marched in by the soldiers ; The boys were marching about the play-ground lately ; The girls did not march in the garden — ; The Egyptians marched after the Israelites in the Red Sea.

— wrestled with — in the play-ground ; Two of the boys were wrestling in school ; Jacob wrestled with an angel ; An angel was wrestled with by Jacob ; The girls do not wrestle with each other.

James's sore finger festered — ; Ann's hand did not fester — .

Ships rock on the sea ; Many vessels were rocking in the harbour ; Trees rock in the wind ; The billows rock to and fro.

Rain drips off the house ; Milk dripped out of the can upon the floor ; Solids do not drip ; Fluids drip ; Wet clothes drip ; Water was dripping off you when you came out of the bath.

A gentleman alighted off his horse at the door ; A coachman alighted off the coach at the toll-bar ; The crows alight on the trees ; Trees are alighted on by birds ; That bird will not alight on the garden-wall ; Snow alights on the roof of the house ; The lark alighted among the corn in the field.

Birds perch on trees ; Trees are perched on by birds ; Cows do not perch ; A large bird was perching on the top of that high tree ; The hens perch in the poultry-house.

The earth moves about the sun, and the moon moves about the earth ; Trees do not move from place to place ; All animals move ; The branches of trees move with the wind ; The eyeball moves in the socket ; Noah's ark moved on the surface of the water.

A watch ticks & the clock ticks ; The desk does not tick ; The clock was not ticking — ; Some insects tick.

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

QUESTIONS—What are drying on the screens in the laundry? Where were the sheets drying yesterday? When do the roads dry fast? What will dry at the fire? When will the shirt dry? At what o'clock will the floor be dry to night?

In what does smoke ascend? What ascended in the air lately? From what do vapours ascend? When do vapours ascend to the clouds? In what did Jesus ascend to heaven? Who ascended to heaven in a chariot of fire? Who ascended in a balloon? In what did Mr Green ascend? Do stones ascend? Do they descend?

What was descending to the ground? From what does rain descend? Who descended in a cloud to Sinai? When does dew descend upon plants? Does smoke ascend? Does it descend?

Where do soldiers march? What is marched in by the soldiers? Who were marching about the play ground? When were the boys marching about the play ground? Did the girls march in the garden? After whom did the Egyptians march? Who marched after the Israelites in the Red Sea?

With whom did —— wrestle? Who were wrestling in school? What were two of the boys doing in school? Who wrestled with an angel? Who was wrestled with by Jacob? Do the girls wrestle?

Whose finger festered? What did his sore finger do? Did Ann's hand fester? What rock on the sea? Do hills rock? In what were many vessels rocking? What rock in the wind? What rock to and fro?

What drips off the house? Out of what did the milk drip? Do solids drip? Do fluids drip? Do dry clothes drip? Do wet clothes drip? What was dripping off you when you came out of the bath?

Who alights off his horse? Where does the gentleman alight? Who alighted off the coach at the toll-bar? What alighted on the trees? Are trees alighted on by birds? Where will the bird not alight? What alighted on the roof of the house? What bird alighted among the corn?

On what do birds perch? Are trees perched on by birds? Do cows perch? Where was the large bird perching? On what tree was the bird perching? Where do the hens perch?

Does the earth move? About what does it move? What moves about the earth? Do trees move from place to place? Do minerals move? Do animals move? What move with the wind? In what does the eyeball move? On what did Noah's ark move? Did Noah's ark sink?

What ticks? What does the clock do? Does the desk tick? Was the clock ticking yesterday? Do any insects tick? What kinds?

|           |             |              |             |
|-----------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| glitter   | glittered   | glittering   | glittered   |
| appear    | appeared    | appearing    | appeared    |
| disappear | disappeared | disappearing | disappeared |
| reside    | resided     | residing     | resided     |
| meditate  | meditated   | meditating   | meditated   |
| turn      | turned      | turning      | turned      |
| boil      | boiled      | boiling      | boiled      |
| mount     | mounted     | mounting     | mounted     |
| plunge    | plunged     | plunging     | plunged     |
| skate     | skated      | skating      | skated      |
| race      | raced       | racing       | raced       |
| gather    | gathered    | gathering    | gathered    |

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

## EXERCISES.

Gold glitters in light ; Swords glitter in the light of the sun ; Cloth does not glitter ; When Christ was transfigured his raiment glittered.

The sun appears in the sky ; The Lord appeared to Abraham ; Christ will appear in the sky to us at the last day ; The angel of the Lord appeared to Moses in a flame of fire, out of the midst of the bush ; We shall all appear before God at the last day ; Christ appeared to the apostles ten times after his resurrection ; Moses and Elias appeared to Peter, James, and John.

Smoke disappears in the air ; The rain disappears in the earth ; The scurvy is disappearing from ——'s arm ; The sun appears in the east ; The sun disappears in the west.

We reside in this house ; The farmer resided beyond the river ; I resided with my aunt at —— ; I never resided near London ; Christ resided at Nazareth with his parents.

Isaac meditated in the field ; David meditated on all God's works ; God's works were meditated on by David ; Saints sometimes meditate on God during the night ; God is sometimes meditated on by saints ; Sinners do not meditate on God's law.

I turn to you ; I turn from you ; All the wheels turn in a clock ; A big dog turned upon a little dog ; A little dog was turned upon by a big dog ; Israel turned to the Lord ; All people do not repent of their sins and turn to the Lord.

Water boils in a kettle on the fire ; Water will not boil on ice ; The soup was boiling in the kitchen ; The milk is not boiling on the fire this afternoon.

Eagles mount in the air ; A balloon mounts to the clouds ; A gentleman mounted upon his grey horse.

An otter plunges in the river after fishes ; Rivers are plunged into by otters ; Divers plunge into the water head foremost ; Scott, the diver, plunged into the Thames many times ; Many people plunge into baths ; The sea is plunged into by many bathers ; Whales plunge into the deep sea when they are harpooned.

Many gentlemen and ladies skate on pools ; The Dutch often skate to markets ; Many persons skated on the river last winter ; The river was skated on by many persons last winter ; Mr —— was skating last December and fell, he broke his arm ; We do not skate on grass.

The boys race in the play-ground ; The girls race in the garden ; Horses race on the race-course ; Skaters race on the ice ; —— was racing last summer ; Two men raced for money last ——.

Clouds gather before a storm ; Several armies gathered near Waterloo ; Gregarious animals gather near each other at night ; Cream gathers on the top of milk ; Snowballs gather as they roll ; The rooks begin to gather in February ; Butter gathers in a churn.

**QUESTIONS.**—What glitters ? What does gold glitter in ? What glitters in the light of the sun ? What does not glitter ? What else ? When did Christ's raiment glitter ?

Where does the sun appear ? Who appeared unto Abraham ? To whom did the Lord appear ? Who will appear at the last day ? When will Christ appear ? Who appeared unto Moses ? Whose angel appeared unto Moses ? In what did the angel of the Lord appear unto Moses ? Out of what did the angel of the Lord appear unto Moses ? Who will appear before God ? When shall we appear before God ? How often did Christ appear to the Apostles after his resurrection ? To whom did Moses and Elias appear ?

What disappears in the air ? What disappears in the earth ? What disappeared from his arm ? Does the sun appear in the North ? Where does it appear ? Does the sun disappear in the South ? Where does it disappear ?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

Who reside in this house ? Where does the farmer reside ? With whom did I reside ? At what place did I reside with my aunt ? Did I ever reside near London ? With whom did Christ reside at Nazareth ?

What did Isaac do in the field ? On what did David meditate ? Did David meditate on the works of God ? What were meditated on by David ? Who meditate on God ? By whom is God meditated on ? When do they meditate on God ? Who do not meditate on the law of God ?

To whom do I turn ? From whom do I turn ? What turn in the clock ? What turned upon a little dog ? By what was a little dog turned upon ? To whom did Israel turn ? Do all people turn to the Lord ?

What boils in a kettle ? Where does water boil ? Will water boil on ice ? What was boiling in the kitchen ? What is not boiling on the fire this afternoon ?

What mounted in the air ? What else ? Upon what did the gentleman mount ? Did the gentleman mount upon an ass ? What mounts to the clouds ?

What animal plunges in the river after fishes ? What are plunged into by otters ? Who plunge into water head foremost ? What diver plunged into the Thames many times ? Where do many people plunge ? By whom is the sea plunged into ? Where do whales plunge when they are harpooned ?

Who skate on pools ? What people often skate to market ? Did — skate on a large pool many years ago ? Where did many people skate last winter ? What was skated on by them ? Who broke his arm when skating ? Do we skate on grass ?

Where do the boys race ? Where do the girls race ? Where do horses race ? Who race on ice ? Who was racing last summer ? When did two men race ? For what ?

When do clouds gather ? What gathered near Waterloo ? What animals gather near each other at night ? Where does cream gather ? When do snowballs gather ? When do the rooks begin to gather ? What gathers in a churn ?

|            |             |              |             |
|------------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| shout      | shouted     | shouting     | shouted     |
| laugh      | laughed     | laughing     | laughed     |
| huzza      | huzzaed     | huzzaing     | huzzaed     |
| cough      | coughed     | coughing     | coughed     |
| start      | started     | starting     | started     |
| limp       | limped      | limping      | limped      |
| skip       | skipped     | skipping     | skipped     |
| listen     | listened    | listening    | listened    |
| frown      | frowned     | frowning     | frowned     |
| smile      | smiled      | smiling      | smiled      |
| soar       | soared      | soaring      | soared      |
| wave       | waved       | waving       | waved       |
| blossom    | blossomed   | blossoming   | blossomed   |
| dawn       | dawned      | dawning      | dawned      |
| close      | closed      | closing      | closed      |
| flash      | flashed     | flashing     | flashed     |
| crack      | cracked     | cracking     | cracked     |
| crackle    | crackled    | crackling    | crackled    |
| rattle     | rattled     | rattling     | rattled     |
| exercise   | exercised   | exercising   | exercised   |
| melt       | melted      | melting      | melted      |
| congregate | congregated | congregating | congregated |



*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS

## EXERCISES.

Boys and girls shout ; The Israelites shouted at Jericho ; The boys shout at play. Men and women laugh ; Beasts do not laugh ; People cough ; Some animals cough ; The cow coughed in the cow house last week.

Boys and men huzza ; Girls and women do not huzza ; We huzzaed when we saw the Princess Victoria ; Sometimes boys huzza at play ; Many people were huzzaing at —— last ——.

Some people start with fear ; A horse started at a wheelbarrow ; A hare started from a dog ; A hare started in the wood last January.

Some people limp ; —— limped last week from pain ; A horse limped with his sore leg ; Lamé dogs limp.

Little girls skip with ropes ; Lamb skip ; Lambs were skipping in the fields last May.

Sometimes we listen to birds ; The children were listening to a barrel-organ yesterday.

People frown and smile ; We frown at careless boys and girls ; Some cross children frown ; —— smiled at —— yesterday.

The eagle and the lark soar in the sky ; The lark soared above us yesterday ; An eagle soared above the mountain ——.

Corn waves in the fields ; Corn waves with the wind in Summer ; The branches of trees wave in the wind.

Flowers blossom in the garden ; Many flowers blossom in the fields ; The apple-trees will blossom in the Spring.

The day dawns in the morning ; The day dawns early in Summer ; The day dawns now at —— eight o'clock.

The day closes in the evening ; The days closes soon in Winter ; The day closes now at —— o'clock.

Lightning flashes in the sky ; Gunpowder flashes with fire ; A pistol flashed in the pan.

Thin ice cracks ; The ice cracked in the pond ; Glass and china crack in hot water ; Wood crackles in the fire ; The wood crackled in the bonfire——.

Hail rattles on the ground, against the windows and on the roofs ; Hail rattled against our school-room windows last March.

Soldiers exercise in a barrack-yard and on the common ; Horses were exercising on the common one Sunday ; The children exercise on the play-ground and in the garden.

Salt melts in water ; Lead melts in fire ; Ice melts in warm weather ; Glass melts in the furnace ; Wax melts by the fire ; The ice melted in the sun shine ; The snow melted with the rain.

Rooks congregate in Spring ; The swallows congregate on the house tops ; Storks congregate in fens ; The rooks congregated on the common —— ; Many swallows were congregating on the house tops last Autumn.

**QUESTIONS.**—Do boys and girls shout ? Who shouted at Jericho ? Where do boys shout ? Who laugh ? Do men and women laugh ? Do beasts laugh ? Do boys and men huzza ? Do woman and girls huzza ? At whom were many people huzzaing last —— ? Do people cough ? Do animals cough ? What animals cough ? What coughed in the cow-house last week ? Do some people start ? With what do some people start ? What started at a wheelbarrow ? What made a horse start ? What started from a dog ? What started in the wood last January ? Do some people limp ? Why did —— limp last week ? Why did a horse limp ? Do some dogs limp ? What dogs limp ? Who skip ? Where were lambs skipping last May ? Do we sometimes listen to birds ? What were the children listening to yesterday ? Who frown and smile ? At whom do we frown ? What children frown ? Who smiled at —— yesterday ? What birds soar in the sky ? What soared above us yesterday ? What soared above the mountain ? Did an eagle soar above the mountain —— ? What waves in the fields ?

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED)****INTRANSITIVE VERBS.**

Does corn wave in the fields ? What makes corn wave in Summer ? In what do branches of trees wave ? What blossoms in the garden ? Do many flowers blossom in the fields ? When will the apple-trees blossom ? When does the day dawn ? Does the day dawn early in Summer ? When does the day close ? Does the day close soon in Winter ? What flashes in the sky ? Does gunpowder flash ? What makes gunpowder flash ? What flashed in the pan ? What kind of ice cracks ? Where did the ice crack ? In what do glass and china crack ? What crackles in the fire ? What crackled in the bon-fire ? What rattles on the ground, against the windows, and on the roof ? What rattled against our school-window last March ? Where do soldiers exercise ? Were horses exercising on the common last Sunday ? Where do the children exercise ? Does salt melt in water ? Where does lead melt ? What makes ice melt ? What melts in the furnace ? Does ice melt by the fire ? What melted in the sun shine ? What melted with the rain ? Where do rooks congregate ? What congregate on the house-tops ? When do storks congregate ? What congregated on the common ? Where were many swallows congregated last Autumn ?

|         |           |            |           |
|---------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| cry     | cried     | crying     | cried     |
| crow    | crew      | crowing    | crowed    |
| cluck   | clucked   | clucking   | clucked   |
| chuckle | chuckled  | chuckling  | chuckled  |
| cackle  | cackled   | cackling   | cackled   |
| gabble  | gabbled   | gabbling   | gabbled   |
| hiss    | hissed    | hissing    | hissed    |
| chirp   | chirped   | chirping   | chirped   |
| caw     | cawed     | cawing     | cawed     |
| coo     | cooed     | cooing     | cooed     |
| hoot    | hooted    | hooting    | hooted    |
| churr   | churred   | churring   | churred   |
| scream  | screamed  | screaming  | screamed  |
| gobble  | gobbled   | gobbling   | gobbled   |
| whistle | whistled  | whistling  | whistled  |
| twitter | twittered | twittering | twittered |
| peep    | peeped    | peeping    | peeped    |
| squeal  | squealed  | squealing  | squealed  |
| squeak  | squeaked  | squeaking  | squeaked  |
| croak   | croaked   | croaking   | croaked   |
| hum     | hummed    | humming    | hummed    |
| buzz    | buzzed    | buzzing    | buzzed    |

**EXERCISES.**

All animals cry.

The cock crows in the morning ; A cock crew on the dung hill ; The cock will crow in the poultry-house to-morrow morning ; The cock crows among the hens ; Hens do not crow ; The cock pheasant crows.

A hen clucks ; Hens cluck for their chickens ; Hens chuckle and cackle ; The hens were cackling yesterday morning.

Geese gabble and hiss ; Old geese hiss at people ; A goose was hissing at — last Spring ; The geese gabble in the pool ; Serpents hiss ; Iron bisses in water.

Young birds chirp among trees ; The grasshopper chirps in the grass ; The cricket chirps in the bake house ; Beetles do not chirp.

The crow, raven, rook and jackdaw caw ; The crows caw in the air and on trees ; The rooks are cawing in the rookery ; Rooks were cawing in the fields last Spring.

The turtle-dove cooes ; Pigeons coo as they fly and as they rest ; The pigeons cooed in the cot last Spring.

**INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)****INTRANSITIVE VERBS.**

The owl hoots at night ; Boys hoot at boys ; A man in the hospital hooted with pain ; Several owls were hooting a few nights ago ; An owl hooted in the old castle last Summer.

The fern-owl churrs at night.

The jay screams by day ; A girl screamed with fear ; Children sometimes scream with joy ; The peacock screams on the lawn ; Eagles and vultures scream.

The turkey gobbles ; The turkeycock gobbled in the yard yesterday.

Some birds whistle ; The blackbird and canary whistle ; The black bird whistles on trees ; The canary whistles in a cage ; Some boys whistle in the streets ; Many blackbirds were whistling in the fields last Summer ; The parrot whistles ; ——'s parrot whistles every day.

The swallow twitters ; Many swallows were twittering near the road last Summer , The swallows were twittering by the river last May.

Young chickens peep ; They peep for their mother ; Young chickens were peeping in the lane last September.

The wagtail squeals ; Young pigs squeal ; The wagtail squeals among the reeds by the brook ; The young pigs were squealing in the piggery last August.

Mice and bats squeak ; Pigs squeak ; Many mice were squeaking in the closet last week.

Ravens croak ; Many frogs were croaking in a pond last Spring ; The ravens were croaking in the field by the dead horse last Winter.

Bees hum ; Some beetles hum ; The bees hummed about the hive last August ; A bee hummed about the window last Summer ; Some beetles were humming in the garden last June.

Bees buzz, gnats, flies and some moths buzz ; A bee buzzed in ——'s hat last Summer ; Many flies were buzzing about our beds last July.

**QUESTIONS.**—Do all animals cry ? When does the cock crow ? When did a cock crow ? Where will a cock crow to-morrow morning ? What crows among the hens ? Do hens crow ? What other birds do not crow ? Does the cock-pheasant crow ? What bird clucks ? For what does a hen cluck ? What do hens do besides cluck ? Where were the hens cackling ? What birds gabble and hiss ? Whom do old geese hiss at ? What do old geese do at people ? What hissed at —— last Spring ? Do the geese gabble ? What gabble in the pool ? Do serpents hiss ? What hisses in water ? Where do young birds chirp ? What chirps among the grass ? Where does the cricket chirp ? What do beetles not do ? What insects do not chirp ? What birds caw ? Where do crows caw ? Where are the rooks cawing ? What caws in the rookery ? Where were the rooks cawing last Spring ? What birds coo ? Where do pigeons coo ? Where did the pigeons coo last Spring ? What does the owl do at night ? Do boys hoot at boys ? What did the man do in the hospital with pain ? What were several owls doing a few nights ago ? What hooted in the old castle walls last Summer ? What bird churrs at night ? What bird screams by day ? What made the girl scream ? What do children do sometimes ? What bird screams on the lawn ? What other birds scream ? Do eagles and vultures scream ? What bird gobbles ? Where did the turkey-cock gobble yesterday ? Do some birds whistle ? Do the blackbird and canary whistle ? Where do some boys whistle ? What birds were whistling in the fields last Summer ? Do parrots whistle ? What does ——'s parrot do every day ? What bird twitters ? Where were many swallows twittering last Summer ? Where did swallows twitter last May ? What birds twittered by the river last May ? What do young chickens do ? What birds peep ? For what do chickens peep ? Where were chickens peeping last September ? Do wag-tails squeal ? Where do young pigs squeal ? Where were young pigs squealing last August ? What animals squeak ? What were mice doing in the closet last week ? What animals croak ? What were many frogs doing in a pond last Spring ? Where were ravens croaking last Winter ? What insects hum ? Do bees hum ? What hummed about the hive last August ? What hummed about the window last Summer ? Where were some beetles humming last June ? What insects buzz ? What buzzed in ——'s hat last Summer ? What buzzed about our beds last July ? Where were many flies buzzing last July ?

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

|         |           |            |           |
|---------|-----------|------------|-----------|
| quack   | quacked   | quacking   | quacked   |
| pipe    | piped     | pipng      | piped     |
| sing    | sang      | singing    | sung      |
| warble  | warbled   | warbling   | warbled   |
| bark    | barked    | barking    | barked    |
| mew     | mewed     | mewing     | mewed     |
| purr    | purred    | purring    | purred    |
| low     | lowed     | lowing     | lowed     |
| bellow  | bellowed  | bellowing  | bellowed  |
| bray    | brayed    | braying    | brayed    |
| neigh   | neighed   | neighing   | neighed   |
| whinny  | whinnied  | whinnying  | whinnied  |
| bleat   | bleated   | bleating   | bleated   |
| grunt   | grunted   | grunting   | grunted   |
| growl   | growled   | growling   | growled   |
| howl    | howled    | howling    | howled    |
| chatter | chattered | chattering | chattered |
| baa     | baaed     | baaing     | baaed     |
| talk    | talked    | talking    | talked    |
| roar    | roared    | roaring    | roared    |
| snore   | snored    | snoring    | snored    |
| snort   | snorted   | snorting   | snorted   |

## EXERCISES.

Ducks quack ; The ducks are quacking in the yard ; Many wild ducks were quacking by the river last December.

A bullfinch pipes in the hedge rows ; Young turkeys pipe.

Many birds sing ; The lark sings in the air ; The nightingale sings at night ; Many birds sing in the woods.

The robin, the hedge-sparrow, the linnet and the nightingale warble ; The robin warbles in Winter ; Nightingales warble during the nights in Spring.

The dog barks at beggars ; He barks at a hedgehog ; He was barking at some one last night ; Dash was barking at some one last week ; The fox and wolf bark.

The cat mews in the kitchen for milk ; The cat mewed at the door one evening last week.

The cat purrs on my knee ; The cat was purring in the kitchen yesterday.

Cows low in the cow house and on the hills ; The bison and the buffalo bellow  
A bull bellowed in the market last market day.

The ass brays on the common ; The pedlar's ass brayed by the way side this morning ; The gypsies' ass brayed in the lane one evening.

The horse neighs for corn ; One of the horses neighed on the race course last September.

The foal whinnies for its mother ; A foal whinnied in the stable last Spring.

Sheep bleat on the pastures ; Sheep were bleating at the river last Winter ; Many sheep were bleating at the sheep shearing last July.

Boars and sows grunt for food ; The boar was grunting in the sty one day last week ; The sow grunts in the yard.

The dog growls ; The wolf and hyæna growl ; The wolf howled in the menagerie.

The monkey chatters ; A magpie chatters ; A green monkey was chattering in the menagerie last October.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### INTRANSITIVE VERBS.

A lamb baas for its mother ; The lambs were baaing in the pasture last year.

People talk ; You talk with your fingers ; Parrots and cockatoos talk ; Mr——'s parrot talks.

The lion roars in the forest ; The tiger and elephant roar ; The lion in the zoological gardens roared last June.

Some people snore in sleep ; You often snore at night ; The pig snores in sleep.

The horse snorts ; The horses were snorting on the common last September.

The mocking bird sings, whistles, screams, barks, mews, crows, warbles, cackles, hoots, talks, shouts, clucks, grunts &c.

**QUESTIONS.**—What animals quack ? Where are ducks quacking ? What birds pipe ? Does the bullfinch pipe ? Do many birds sing ? Where does the lark sing ? When does the nightingale sing ? Do many birds sing in the wood ? What birds warble ? Does the robin warble ? When does the robin sing ? Does the nightingale sing in Summer ? Does it sing by night or by day ? What barks at beggars ? What else does he bark at ? At what was the dog barking last night ? What was Dash barking at last week ? What other animals bark ? What purrs on my knee ? What was purring in the kitchen yesterday ? Where was the cat purring yesterday ? Where do cows low ? What lows in the cow-house ? Where else do cows low ? What animals bellow ? What bellowed in the market last market day ? What brays on the common ? Where does the ass bray ? Whose ass brayed by the way side this morning ? Whose ass brayed in the lane one evening ? For what does the horse neigh ? Where did a horse neigh last September ? What whinnies for its mother ? Where did a foal whinny last Spring ? What bleats on the pasture ? Where were sheep bleating last Winter ? Where were many sheep bleating last July ? What animals grunt for food ? Where was the boar grunting one day last week ? Does the sow grunt ? What animals growl ? What growled in the menagerie ? What animals chatter ? Does a magpie chatter ? Where was the green monkey chattering last October ? For what does the lamb baa ? What animals baa ? Where were the lambs baaing last May ? Do people talk ? With what do you talk ? What birds talk ? Whose parrot talked ? What animals roar ? Where does the lion roar ? What roared in the zoological gardens last June ? What noise do some people make in sleep ? What do you often do at night ? Does the pig snore in sleep ? What do you often do at night ? Does the pig snore in sleep ? What animals snort ? What were the horses doing on the common last September ? Where were the horses snorting last September ? What does the mocking bird do ?

---

### IMPERSONAL VERBS.

*Impersonal Verbs are those which do not admit of a person as their nominative. Their real character seems to be that they assert the existence of some action or state ; but refer to it no particular subject.*

|      | PRESENT.            | PAST.                | FUTURE.                  |
|------|---------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|
| AFF. | { It rains.         | It rained——          | It will rain——           |
|      | { It does rain      | It did rain——        |                          |
|      | { It is raining     | It was raining——     | It will be raining——     |
| NEG. | { It does not rain  | It did not rain——    | It will not be raining—— |
|      | { It is not raining | It was not raining—— | It will not rain——       |
| AFF. | { It snows          | It snowed——          | It will snow——           |
|      | { It does snow      | It did snow——        |                          |
|      | { It is not snowing | It was snowing——     | It will be snowing——     |
| NEG. | { It does not snow  | It did not snow——    | It will not snow——       |
|      | { It is not snowing | It was not snowing—— | It will not be snowing—— |

*INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)*

## IMPERSONAL VERBS.

|      | PRESENT.               | PAST.                   | FUTURE.                   |
|------|------------------------|-------------------------|---------------------------|
| AFF. | { It hails             | It hailed——             | It will hail——            |
|      | { It does hail         | It did hail——           |                           |
|      | { It is hailing        | It was hailing——        | It will be hailing——      |
| NEG. | { It does not hail     | It did not hail——       | It will not hail——        |
|      | { It is not hailing    | It was not hailing——    | It will not be hailing——  |
| AFF. | { It freezes           | It froze——              | It will freeze——          |
|      | { It does freeze       | It did freeze——         |                           |
|      | { It is freezing       | It was freezing——       | It will be freezing——     |
| NEG. | { It does not freeze   | It did not freeze——     | It will not freeze——      |
|      | { It is not freezing   | It was not freezing——   | It will not be freezing—— |
| AFF. | { It thaws             | It thawed——             | It will thaw——            |
|      | { It does thaw         | It did thaw——           |                           |
|      | { It is thawing        | It was thawing——        | It will be thawing——      |
| NEG. | { It does not thaw     | It did not thaw——       | It will not thaw——        |
|      | { It is not thawing    | It was not thawing——    | It will not be thawing——  |
| AFF. | { It blows             | It blew——               | It will blow——            |
|      | { It does blow         | It did blow——           |                           |
|      | { It is blowing        | It was blowing——        | It will be blowing——      |
| NEG. | { It does not blow     | It did not blow——       | It will not blow——        |
|      | { It is not blowing    | It was not blowing——    | It will not be blowing——  |
| AFF. | { It thunders          | It thundered——          | It will thunder——         |
|      | { It does thunder      | It did thunder——        |                           |
|      | { It is thundering     | It was thundering——     | It will be thundering——   |
| NEG. | { It does not thunder  | It did not thunder——    | It will not thunder——     |
|      | { It is not thundering | It was not thundering—— | It will not be thundering |
| AFF. | { It lightens          | It lightened——          | It will lighten——         |
|      | { It does lighten      | It did lighten——        |                           |
|      | { It is lightening     | It was lightening——     | It will be lightening——   |
| NEG. | { It does not lighten  | It did not lighten——    | It will not lighten——     |
|      | { It is not lightening | It was not lightening—— | It will not be lightening |

## EXERCISES.

It rains ; it does not rain to day ; it rained yesterday ; it did not rain yesterday ; it will rain to-morrow ; it will not rain to-morrow ; it is not raining ; it is raining now ; it was raining yesterday ; it was raining last Wednesday ; it was not raining last Sunday ; it will not rain to-morrow ; it will rain next April ; it will be raining soon, it will not be raining an hour hence,

It snows in Winter ; it does not snow in Summer ; it snowed last January ; it did not snow last August ; it will snow next Winter ; it will not snow next June ; it is not snowing now ; it is snowing now ; it was snowing a few days ago ; it will be snowing a few —— hence ; it will not be snowing to-morrow.

It does not hail ; it did not hail yesterday ; it hailed last April ; it will hail next Summer ; it hails in Summer and in Winter ; it was hailing some time ago ; it was not hailing last week ; it will not be hailing —— ; it is not hailing now ; it will not hail to-day ; it did hail a few weeks ago ; it did not hail last Sunday.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

### IMPERSONAL VERBS.

It freezes in Winter ; it does not freeze in July ; it froze a few nights ago ; it will freeze to-night ; it will not freeze to-night ; it is not freezing now ; it will not be freezing to-morrow noon ; it was freezing one month ago ; it froze yesterday.

It is thawing ; it is not thawing ; it thaws after frost ; it thaws in Winter ; it does not freeze in Summer ; it does not thaw in Summer ; it was thawing last Winter after frost ; it will be thawing next Winter after frost ; it did not thaw last Summer.

It blows ; it does not blow ; it blows in Spring, in Summer, in Autumn and in Winter ; it does not blow much in Summer ; it blowed much last Spring and last Summer ; it was blowing last September ; it will blow much next March.

It thunders in Summer ; it thundered last December ; it sometimes thunders in Autumn, it seldom thunders in Winter ; it was thundering last August ; it is not thundering now ; it did not thunder yesterday ; it will not thunder to-morrow.

It lightens ; it does not lighten ; it lightened last Summer, and last December, it did not lighten last week ; it will lighten next Summer ; it is not lightening now ; it lightens by day and by night.

**QUESTIONS.**—Does it rain ? Did it rain yesterday ? When did it rain ? Will it rain to-morrow ? Is it raining now ? Was it raining yesterday ? When was it raining ? Was it raining last Friday ? Will it rain to-morrow ? When will it rain ?

When does it snow ? When does it not snow ? Did it snow last January ? Does it snow now ? Will it snow next Winter ? Will it snow next June ? Is it snowing ? Was it snowing a few days ago ? Will it be snowing to-morrow ?

Does it hail ? Did it hail yesterday ? Did it hail last April ? Will it hail next Summer ? Does it hail in Summer ? Does it hail in Winter ? When was it hailing ? Was it hailing last week ? Will it be hailing to day ? Is it hailing now ?

When does it freeze ? Did it freeze last July ? Did it freeze a few days ago ? Will it freeze to night ? Is it freezing now ? Will it be freezing to-morrow noon ? Did it freeze last Midsummer ? Was it freezing a month ago ? Did it freeze yesterday ?

Is it thawing ? When does it thaw ? Does it thaw in Winter ? Does it freeze in Summer ? Does it thaw in Summer ? Was it thawing last Winter ? When will it be thawing again ? Did it thaw last Summer ?

Does it blow ? When does it blow ? When did it blow much ? Did it blow much last — ? Does it blow much in Summer ? When did it blow much ? Was it blowing last September ? Will it blow much next March ?

When does it thunder ? Did it thunder last December ? When does it sometimes thunder ? When does it seldom thunder ? When was it thundering ? Is it thundering now ? Did it thunder yesterday ? Will it thunder to-morrow ?

Does it lighten now ? When did it lighten ? Did it lighten last Summer ? Did it lighten last December ? Did it lighten last week ? When will it lighten ? Is it lightening now ? Does it lighten by night ? Does it lighten by day ?

**\*\*\*** *The neuter pronoun IT is sometimes employed to express the thing, whatever it may be, that is the cause of an effect or event ; or any person considered merely as a cause.*

### EXERCISES.

It is fine ; it is rainy ; it is not wet, it is dry. it is clean, it is not cloudy ; it is tempestuous ; it is cold, it is not warm ; it is bazy, it is not clear ; it is foggy ; it is warm, but frosty ; it is fine, but misty ; it is cold, but fine ; it is pleasant, but cold ; it is dark, but not wet ; it is cloudy but not rainy.

It was warm yesterday, but rainy ; it was rainy yesterday, but warm ; it was cloudy yesterday, but not wet ; it was cold yesterday, but not frosty ; it was tempestuous last Autumn, but not cold ; it was warm last Summer, but dry.

## INDICATIVE MOOD (CONTINUED.)

## IMPERSONAL VERBS.

It is dawn, it is not day ; it is morning, it is not evening ; it is forenoon, not afternoon ; it is not midnight, it is noon ; it is sunrise, not sunset ; it is Spring, not Winter ; it is Wednesday, not Thursday ; it is light, not dark ; it is January, not February ; it is Winter, not Summer ; it is seed-time, not harvest ; it is 184—.

It is not rainy to-day ; it was rainy a few days ago ; it will be rainy again soon ; it is not snowy to-day ; it was snowy last Winter ; it will be snowy next Winter ; it is not snowy in Summer ; it is sometimes snowy in Spring ; it is snowy and frosty in Winter ; it is not frosty to-day ; it is windy to-day ; it was not windy yesterday ; it is sunny in Summer ; it is sunny to-day ; it is stormy every Winter ; it is stormy at sea ; it is not stormy now ; it was stormy lately ; it will be stormy in March ; it is always cold in Winter ; it is not cold to-day ; it is cold in Greenland ; it is not cold in Africa ; it is warm in Africa ; it was cold lately ; it is cold now ; it is warm now ; it is not warm in Greenland ; it is warm in the kitchen ; it was cloudy lately ; it will be cloudy next Winter ; it is clear now ; it is clear in Summer ; it is dull in Winter ; it is foggy in Autumn ; it is sultry in Summer ; it is dry in October ; it is changeable in April ; it is pleasant in Spring ; it is dark in Winter ; it is hot in the West Indies ; it is cold at the Poles ; it was hazy yesterday ; it will be clear at noon ; it was not very cold last November.

QUESTIONS.—Is it fine ? Is it rainy ? Is it wet ? Is it dry ? Is it clean or cloudy ? Is it tempestuous ? Is it cold or warm ? Is it clear or foggy ? Is it frosty ? Is it misty ? Is it pleasant ? Is it dark ?

Was it warm yesterday ? Was it rainy yesterday ? Was it cloudy yesterday ? Was it wet ? Was it frosty yesterday ? Was it tempestuous last Autumn ? When was it warm but not dry ? When was it misty in the morning, but clear at noon ? When was it frosty at night but warm by day ?

Is it dawn ? Is it day ? Is it morning or evening ? Is it forenoon or afternoon ? Is it midnight ? What is it ? Is it Spring or Winter ? Is it Wednesday ? What day is it ? Is it dark or light ? Is it January ? What month is it ? Is it Winter ? What season is it ? Is it seed time or harvest ? Is it dinner time ? Is it breakfast-time ? Is it starlight or moonlight ? What year is it ?

Is it rainy to-day ? When was it rainy ? Will it be rainy to-morrow ? When was it snowy ? Is it snowy to-day ? Was it snowy last Winter ? Will it be snowy next Winter ? Is it snowy in Summer ? Will it be snowy next month ? When is it sometimes snowy ? When is it snowy and frosty ? Is it frosty to-day ? Is it windy to-day ? Was it windy yesterday ? When is it sunny ? Is it sunny to-day ? When was it stormy ? When will it be stormy ? When is it always cold ? Where is it cold ? Where is it not cold ? Where is it warm ? Where is it not warm ? When is it cloudy ? When will it be cloudy ? Is it clear now, or cloudy ? When is it dull ? When is it foggy ? When is it sultry ? In what month is it dry ? In what month is it changeable ? In what season is it pleasant ? In what season is it dark ? Where is it hot ? Where is it cold ? Was it hazy yesterday ? When will it be clear to-day ? Was it very cold last November ?

## QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS.

Who is cold ? *It is I.* Who is warm ? *It is not I.* Who has a watch ? *It is I.* Who is lame ? *It is he.* Who broke the window ? *It was he.* Who was weeping ? *It was not she.* Who sewed a sampler ? *It was she.* Who is tallest ? *It is you.* Who digs the garden ? *It is the gardener.* Who made you ? *It was God.* Who saves you ? *It is Jesus Christ.* Who sanctifies you ? *It is the Holy Ghost.* Who gives you food ? *It is God.* Who sent you to school ? *It was my parents.* Who is the best scholar ? *It is —.* Who is the eldest scholar ? *It is —.* Who was the first man ? *It was Adam.* Who was the wisest man ? *It was Solomon.* Who was the meekest man ? *It was Moses.* Who was the worst man ? *It was Judas.* Who has red hair ? *It is —.* Which is the new pupil ? *It is that boy.* Which is first day of the week ? *It is the Sabbath.* Which is the last month of the year ? *It is December.* Which of the girls is the eldest ? *It is —.* What is your name ? *It is —.* What is my name ? *It is —.* What o'clock is it ? *It is — o'clock.*









